



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

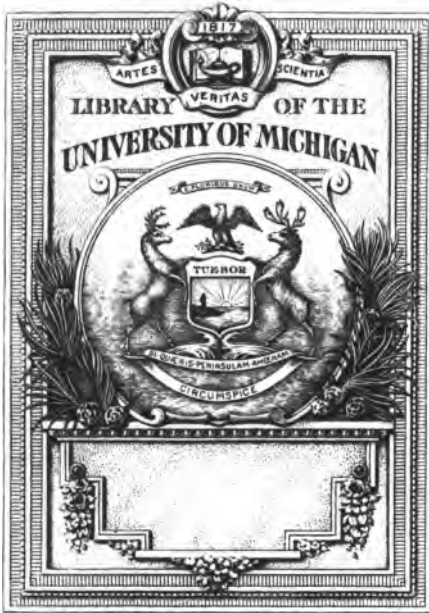
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

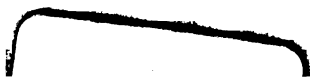
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1,410,721



RECEIVED IN EXCHANGE
FROM
Duke University Library

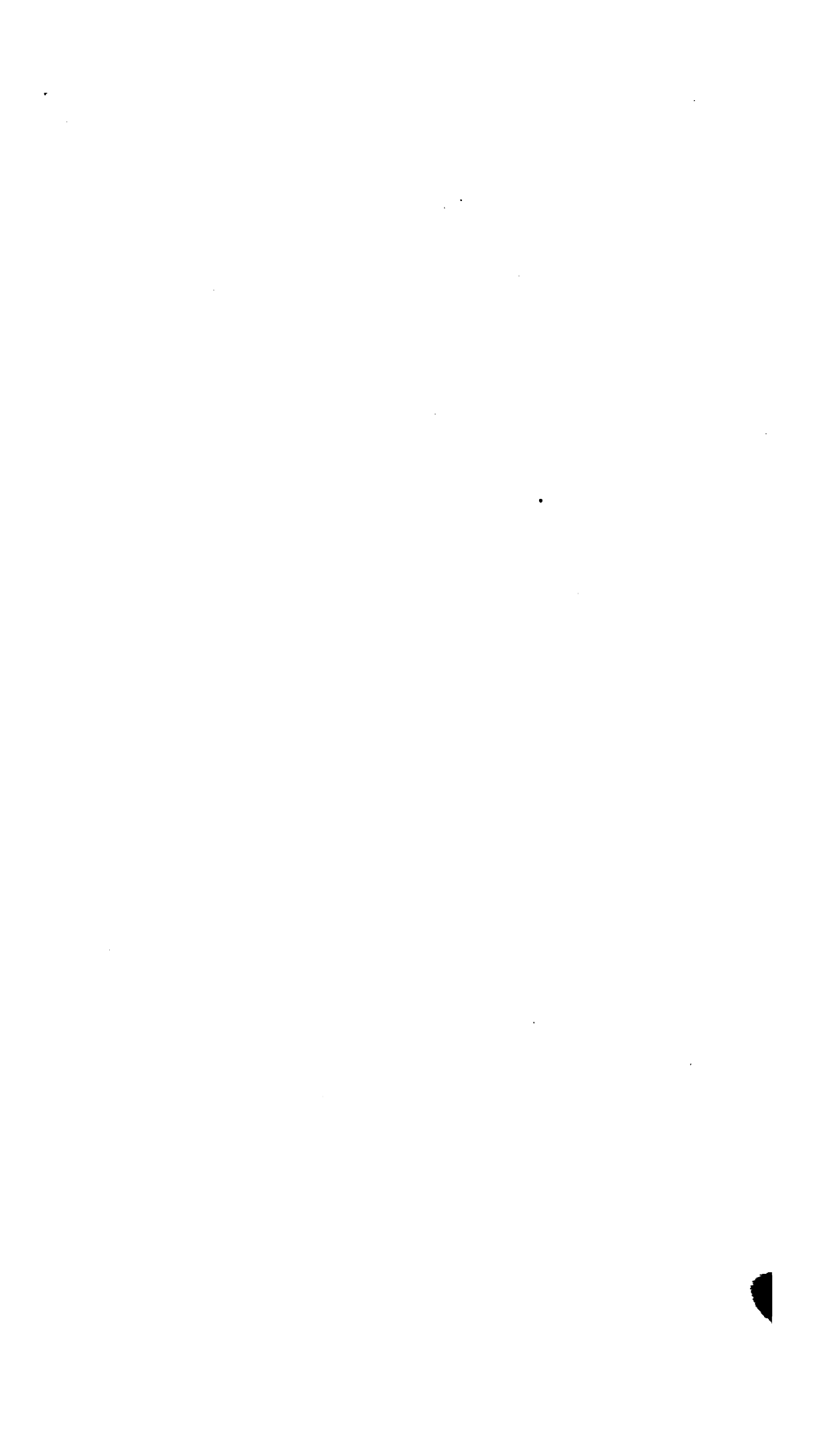


822.8

S530

I5s

7



New Shakspeare Society.

SERIES IV. #1

Shakspeare Allusion-Books.

PART I.

A.D. 1592-8.

Greene's *Groatsworth of Wit.* Chettle's *Kind-Harts Dream.*
Chettle's *Englandes Mourning Garment.* *A Mournfull Dittie.*
Gabriel Harvey's *Third Letter.*
Five Sections of Meres's *Wits Treasury.* *Willobie His Avis.*
Extracts from Clark's *Polimanteia.*
 &c. &c. &c.

EDITED BY

C. M. INGLEBY, ESQ., M.A., LL.D.

FOREIGN SECRETARY TO THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, LONDON.

PUBLISHED FOR

THE NEW SHAKSPERE SOCIETY

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL,
LONDON, E.C., 1874.

PUBLICATIONS
OF THE
NEW SHAKSPERE SOCIETY.

1. **Series I. Transactions.** Part I, containing 4 Papers, and editions of the genuine parts of *Timon*, and *Pericles*, by the Rev. F. G. Fleay, M.A., with Discussions on the Papers.
- 2 **Series IV. Shakspeare Allusion-Books.** Part I. 1592-8 A.D. (Greenes Groatesworth of Wit [written in 1592], 1596; Henry Chettle's 'Kind-Harts Dreame' [written in 1593]; 'Englandes Mourning Garment' [1603]; A Mourneful Dittie [1603]; five sections from Francis Meres's *Palladis Tamia*, 1598, &c. &c.); edited by C. Mansfield Ingleby, Esq., LL.D.

Publications of the NEW SHAKSPERE SOCIETY now at Press.

- Series I. Transactions.** Part II, containing Papers by J. W. Hales, Esq., M.A., the Rev. F. G. Fleay, M.A., and Richard Simpson, Esq., B.A.; with Discussions on the Papers.
- Series II. Plays.** The First two Quartos of *Romeo and Juliet*, 1597 and 1599, in *a.* simple Reprints; *b.* Parallel Texts, arranged so as to show their Differences, and with Collations of all the Quartos and Folio; *c.* a revised Edition of the Quarto Text of 1599, collated with the other Quartos and the Folio; the whole edited by P. A. Daniel, Esq.
- Series III. Originals and Analogues.** Part I. *a.* The Tragicall Historie of Romeus and Juliet, written first in Italian by Bandell, and nowe in Englishe by Ar[thur] Br[ooke], 1562; edited by P. A. Daniel, Esq. *b.* The goodly hystory of the true and constant loue between Rhomeo and Julietta; from Painter's *Palace of Pleasure*, 1567; edited by P. A. Daniel, Esq.

Publications Suggested.

- Series II.** 1. Parallel Texts of the Quarto and Folio of *Henry V.*, to be edited by Dr Brinsley Nicholson. 2. *The Two Noble Kinsmen*, to be edited by Harold Littledale, Esq.
- Parallel Texts of the Imperfect sketches of *b.* Hamlet and its Quarto 2 (with the Folio and a revised Text). *c.* Merry Wives of Windsor, and Folio 1; *d.* The Contention, and Henry VI, Part 2, in F 1; The True Tragedy, and Henry VI, Part 3, in F 1.
- Parallel Texts of the following Quarto Plays and their versions in the First Folio, with collations: Richard III, Q 1; 2 Henry IV, Q 1; Troilus and Cressida, Q 1; Lear, Q 1. Of Othello, four Texts: Q 1, Q 2, F 1, and a revised Text.
- Parallel Texts of the two earliest Quartos of *Midsummer Night's Dream*, and *The Merchant of Venice*.

SHAKSPERE
ALLUSION-BOOKS.

PART I.

EDITED BY

Clement
C. M. Ingleby
C. M. INGLEBY, M.A., LL.D.

FOREIGN SECRETARY TO THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF LITERATURE, LONDON.

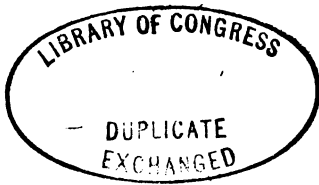
PUBLISHED FOR

The New Shakspeare Society

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL,
LONDON, E.C., 1874.

822.8
S530
I55

By Transfer
MAR 18 1925



4

Series IV. No. 1.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

L 20 1932 EXCH L.
 General
 exch.
 library
 Duke University
 9-22-1935

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
GENERAL INTRODUCTION	i
I. On "Green's Groatsworth of Wit"	ii
II. On "Kind-Harts Dream"	viii
III. On "Englandes Mourning Garment"	xiii
IV. AND V. On "A Mournfull Dittie" and "I. C.'s 12th Epigram"	xxi
VI. On Gabriel Harvey's Third Letter	xxii
VII. On Five Sections of Meres' "Wits Treasury" ...	xxiii
VIII. On Spenser's "Colin Clouts Come Home Againe" ...	xxiv
IX. On "Willobie his Avisa"	xxviii
X-XVII. On an "Epicidium," Drayton's "Matilda," "Polimanteia," &c.	xxxi-xxxv
A few Notes and Corrections to Gabriel Harvey's Third Letter ...	xxxvi
SUPPLEMENT. By R. Simpson, Esq. :	
I. Greene on Nash	xxxvii
II. Chettle on Shakspeare	xli
III. Marlowe, Greene, and Shakspeare	xlv
GREENE'S GROATSWORTH OF WIT	I
(Allusion to Shakspeare, p. 30, l. 31-35).	
KIND-HARTS DREAM, by H[enry] C[hettle]	35
(Allusion to Shakspeare, p. 38, l. 8-17).	
ENGLANDES MOURNING GARMENT [by Henry Chettle] ...	77
(Allusion to Shakspeare, p. 98, l. 11-16).	
A MOURNEFULL DITTIE, entituled Elizabeths Losse, together with A Welcome for King James	117
(Allusion to Shakspeare, p. 119, l. 4-7).	
I. C.'s 12TH EPIGRAM, from Epigrames served out in 52 severall Dishes for every man to tast without surfeting	121
(Allusion to Shakspeare, p. 122, l. 12-13).	

70412

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
GABRIEL HARVEY'S THIRD LETTER, from Foure Letters, and certain Sonnets, &c.	123
(Allusions to Shakspere, p. 130, l. 13, p. 148, l. 25-30).	
Five Sections of PALLADIS TAMIA : WITS TREASURY, by Francis Meres	151
(Ten allusions to Shakspere, pp. 157, 159-162).	
Stanza from Edmund Spenser's COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE	168
(Alluding to Shakspere under the name Aetion).	
Hexameton prefixed to WILLOBIE HIS AVISA	170
(Mentioning Shakspere and his <i>Lucrece</i>).	
Canti XLIV.—XLVII. of WILLOBIE HIS AVISA	171
(Alluding to Shakspere under his initials).	
W[illiam] Har[bert]'s EPICEDIUM	177
(Mentioning <i>Lucrece</i>).	
Sixth Verse of Michael Drayton's LEGEND OF MATILDA ...	178
(Mentioning <i>Lucrece</i>).	
Extract from W[illiam] C[larke]'s POLIMANTEIA	179
(Mentioning Shakspere and his <i>Lucrece</i>).	
John Weever's 22ND EPIGRAM, <i>Ad Gulielmum Shakspeare</i> , from his EPIGRAMMES IN THE OLDEST CUT AND NEWEST FASHION	181
(Mentioning Shakspere's two chief poems and two of his tragedies).	
Extract from R[ichard] C[arew]'s EXCELLENCIE OF THE ENGLISH TONGUE	183
(Mentioning Shakspere).	
Three Stanzas from R[obert] T[ofte]'s MONTH'S MIND OF A MELANCHOLY LOVER	184
(Describing a performance of <i>Love's Labours Lost</i>).	
A REMEMBRANCE OF SOME ENGLISH POETS, from POEMS IN DIVERS HUMORS, attributed to Richard Barnfield ...	186
(Mentioning Shakspere and his two chief poems).	
Extract from Satyres X. and VII. of John Marston's SCOURGE OF VILLANIE	187-8
(Parodying and quoting a line from <i>Richard III.</i> and alluding to <i>Romeo and Juliet</i>).	

GENERAL INTRODUCTION.

A SECTION of our Reprints appears under the title of *Allusion-Books*. By this term we intend to cover not only those books which afford some *allusion*, or indirect reference, to Shakspeare or to a work of his, but also those which directly deal with either: i. e. which mention him by name as the author of such and such a poem or play, or as a poet worthy of praise or of blame. This distinction is important, and it is but right, once for all, to insist upon it. Let us take an extreme instance of each term. In the *Inferno* of Dante (Cant. III.) occur these lines:

e vidi l'ombra di colui
Che fece per viltate il grand rifiuto,

as to which it is still a debateable question, who is specially signalized under the description of the man "who made, through baseness, the great refusal": in fact, three different interpretations have found supporters. If, as has been suggested, the reference be to Celestine the Fifth, this is an extreme instance of an *allusion proper*. De Quincey, in his admirable essay on *Style* (Works, Black's ed., vol. x. p. 254), has a note on the *Cassandra* of Lycophron, in which he speaks of the "symbolic images, which should naturally be intelligible enough to us who know the several histories" of the Trojan heroes, "but which (from the particular selection of accidents or circumstances used for the designation of persons) read like riddles without the aid of a commentator." De Quincey strictly calls these, *allusions* to the persons in question; "as if," he remarks, "I should describe Cromwell by the expression, 'unfortunate tamer of horses,' &c. &c., or a noble lord of the last century as 'the roaster of men.'" (Essay on *Jean Paul Richter*: Works, vol. xiii. p. 124.) Carlyle's works, again, are like Jean Paul's in this respect: full of *allusions*, often of the most obscure kind, to persons and events. To this day many of the *allusions* in the works of our old poets are uncertain. Assuredly "he who left untold," &c., in *Il Penseroso*, is Chaucer; but whether the next allusion be to Spenser only, or to Bojardo as well, remains an open question.

But, on the other hand, when a writer is named, or mentioned in terms which *directly* identify him, it is not strictly correct to call such a reference, an *allusion*, since there is no by-play, or side-glance at an incident or event which may serve as the middle term of identification. Thus when Henry Willobie's anonymous eulogist writes

And *Shake-speare* paints poor *Lucrece* rape,

one can hardly say that the *Rape of Lucrece* or its author are *alluded* to: they are *directly noticed*. But notwithstanding, it is a fact that a vast number of such notices involve an indirect reference to the writer or the writing; and we may surely be allowed, for the sake of convenience, to employ a title, to cover all our Reprints in this Section, which faithfully describes the greater part of them, and is applicable, with some little license, to nearly all.

The first instalment of our *Allusion-Books* consists of the following:—

I. Green's *Groats-worth of Wit*; bought with a million of Repentance. We know of no copy of the first edition, nor, in fact, of any edition earlier than that of 1596. We have therefore reprinted Mr Henry Huth's copy of that edition. The British Museum Library has a copy of the edition of 1617. The Bodleian Library, Oxford, has copies of the editions published in 1621 and 1629: the former of which, by a very common error of the press, reads "Tygres head," instead of "Tygers (or Tygres) heart," in the passage containing the famous allusion to Shakspeare and his Third Part of Henry VI.

The title of this work is not *The Groats-worth of Wit, &c.*; but *Green's Groats-worth of Wit, &c.*, and herein lies matter for speculation. It was a practice with the writers of that time to combine some name, *not always* that of the author, with the title: e. g. *The Countess of Pembroke's Passion, Willobie his Avisá, &c.* In the case of Robert Greene's remarkable tract, as in that of *Avisa*, there was a special motive for the prominence accorded to the author's name in the title. It was one of Greene's posthumous works, and was revised and curtailed by his literary executor Henry Chettle, before it saw the light. At that day Greene's name had an extraordinary prestige, owing to the quantity and popularity of his literary productions, both in prose and in verse, dramatic and lyric. Accordingly Chettle puts Greene's name first, not only to bespeak the interest, and provoke the curiosity, of the public, but also to remind the reader of Greene's recent death and Chettle's editorship.

As Robert Greene died on Sept. 2 or 3, 1592, we may safely

refer the manuscript to the summer or autumn of that year: and as *Kind-Hart's Dreame* (which contains an allusion to *Green's Groats-worth of Wit*) was entered on the registers of the Stationers' Co. in Dec., 1592, it follows that Greene's book was printed and published between those two dates. That portion of this singular tract which entitles it to a place among our *Allusion-Books* is the address, (following on the main story, and immediately preceding Greene's farewell,) "To those gentlemen his quondam acquaintance, that spend their wits in making plays;" which deals with five play-makers (not counting Shakspeare), but is specially addressed to three of them. These three have been identified as (1) Christopher Marlowe, (3) George Peele, and (2) Thomas Nash. This address is eminently suggestive of the low estate of the players at that date, and the discredit which attached to the writers who supplied them with copy. Only ponder the scorn with which John Day, and John Davies of Hereford (the admirer, if not the actual friend, of Shakspeare and Burbage), say of the player's vocation. The former (if, as the late Mr Bolton Corney conjectured, he were the author of *The Returne from Pernassus*, 1606, acted in 1602) puts the following speech into the mouth of *Studioso* (Actus 5, scæna 1):

Fayre fell good *Orpheus*, that would rather be
 King of a mole hill, then a Keysars slave:
 Better it is mongst fidlers to be chiefe,
 Then at [a] plaiers trencher beg reliefe.
 But ist not strange this [these] mimick apes should prize
 Unhappy Schollers at a hireling rate.
 Vile world, that lifts them up to hye degree,
 And treads us downe in groveling misery.
England affordes those glorious vagabonds,
 That carried earst their fardels on their backes,
 Coursers to ride on through the gazing streetes,
 Sooping it in their glaring Satten sutes,
 And Pages to attend their maisterships:
 With mouthing words that better wits have framed,
 They purchase lands, and now Esquiers are made.

(the last couplet not improbably alluding to Shakspeare). To this *Philomusus* replies,

What ere they seeme being even at the best,
 They are but sporting fortunes scornfull jests.

John Davies writes thus:

Good God! that ever *pride* should stoop so low,
 That is by nature so exceeding hie:
 Base *pride*, didst thou thy selfe, or others know,
 Wouldst thou in *harts* of Apish *Actors* lie,
 That for a Cue wil sel their *Qualitie*?
 Yet they through thy perswasion (being strong)

Doe weene they merit immortality,
 Onely because (forsooth) they use their *Tongue*,
 To speake as they are taught, or right or *wronge*.

If *pride* ascende the *stage* (ô base ascent)
 Al men may see her, for nought comes thereon
 But to be seene, and where *Vice* should be shent,
 Yea, made most odious to ev'ry one,
 In blazing her by demonstration
 Then *pride* that is more than most vicious,
 Should there endure open damnation,
 And so shee doth, for shee's most odious
 In *Men* most base, that are ambitious.

(*Microcosmos*, &c., 1603, pp. 214-5.) Even Lodge, who had indeed never trod the stage,¹ but had written several plays, and had no reason to be ashamed of his antecedents, speaks of the vocation of the play-maker as sharing the odium attaching to the actor:—

At last he left me, where at first he found me,
 Willing me let the world and ladies knowe
 Of Scilla's pride, and then by oath he bound me
 To write no more of that whence shame doth grow :
 Or tie my pen to pennic-knaues delight,
 But live with fame, and so for fame to write.

(*Scillae's Metamorphosis* : last stanza before *L'Envoiy*.) At this day we can hardly realise the scorn which was thrown on all sides upon those who made acting a means of livelihood. Let their lives be as cleanly and their dealings as upright as they might

¹ In the Preface to Mr Collier's Reprint of the "Life and Death of William Longbeard, &c, by Thomas Lodge, 1593," (standing 7th in a volume of Reprints dated 1866) we have Mr Collier's latest deliverances on this matter. He says that "at one period, like many others, he [Lodge] coupled the profession of author and actor:" and subsequently says that Lodge "suffered so much from poverty, as to be driven from the university to the stage." The story is a pure fiction. It was started in

I. Dodsley's Select Collection of Old Plays, 1825, edited by Mr J. P. Collier, and repeated in

II. Gosson's School of Abuse, 1841, edited by Mr J. P. Collier.

III. Memoirs of Edward Alleyn, 1841, pp. 40—45, by Mr J. P. Collier.

IV. The Shakespeare Society's Papers, vol. iii. 1847, p. 145, Paper by Mr J. P. Reardon.

V. Lodge's Defence of Plays, and Alarum against Usurers, 1853, edited by Mr David Laing, with the aid of Mr J. P. Collier.

VI. Lodge's Life and Death of William Longbeard, [n. d.] edited by J. P. Collier. The true facts are set forth in

1. Was Thomas Lodge an actor? An Exposition touching the Social Status of the Playwright, in the time of Elizabeth, by C. M. Ingleby, LL.D., 1868.

2. Vol. ix. of Early English Text Society's Publications. Preface (on Vagabonds), 1869, pp. xxiv. xxv., by Edward Viles and F. J. Furnivall.

3. The *Academy* for Jan. 24, 1874. Letter from Mr F. J. Furnivall.

Mr Collier's last words on this and other falsifications with which he is charged, is to lay the fault if any on Messrs Amyot, Bruce, and others, who copied and collated for him, all of whom died years ago. See the *Athenæum* for Feb. 21, 1874. To Dr G. H. Kingsley belongs the credit of having first detected this miserable falsification.

they were deemed to be *sans aveu*, runaways and vagrants: and even Shakspeare suffered so keenly from his *pariah* condition, that he exclaims,

My name be buried where my body is,
And live no more to shame nor me nor you!
For I am shamed by that which I bring forth,
And so should you to love things nothing worth.

Things were come to a pretty pass when a reckless profligate like Robert Greene could afford to hurl scorn at Shakspeare: the dramatist, low as he was, to pelt the poor player, who had done his best at that time to be a play-wright "of threads and patches," before showing himself a dramatist of the highest genius and originality.

Apart from the identity of the second play-maker, which has been the subject of debate, there is happily no question as to the meaning of the address. It is the players whom he designates *burs*, *puppets*, *antics*, *crows* (deckt with peacock's feathers), *apes*, *rude grooms*, *buckram gentlemen*, *peasants*, and *painted monsters*. Now, hard measure as this is, insolent and insulting as such nicknames are and were, it is not too much to say that they were felt to be appropriate to the class at which they were hurled. It was the trick of the time to speak of them in those terms. Davies, as we have seen, has *apish actors*, *men most base*, &c.; Heywood, *puppets*, *painted images*, &c.; Robert Burton, *butterflies*, *baboons*, *apes*, and *antics*; and so forth.

At a time when the players were pelted on all hands, like men in the pillory, it was a safe game for Robert Greene, a repentant playwright, to *fling muck-beds* (to use De Morgan's phrase: *Budget of Paradoxes*, p. 163) at an unrepentant player, who had inherited the low caste of his class, and added to it the unpardonable sin of writing plays on his own account, and worse (if possible) of altering for the better the plays of other men.

It seems to have been the trick, too, of that age, as prolific in the language of abuse as of poetry, to invent ridiculous or contemptuous nicknames, and fasten them upon eminent men of the quality. Two in particular possess interest for us: viz., *show-thing* (Shakspeare's nickname for Ben Jonson as a Comedian),¹ and *Shake-scene*, Greene's nickname for Shakspeare as a Tragedian. Note here that one practice, by which the Tragedian made himself ridiculous in the eyes of the educated, was over-doing the buskin-

¹ Readers who are curious on this point are referred to a recently published Shakespeare-Anthology, entitled *Shakespeare's Centurie of Prayse*, pp. 208 and 231. (Birmingham: printed by Josiah Allen for the Editor, Dr C. M. Ingleyby.)

tread by which he *shook the stage*. (See Ben Jonson's Commendatory verses on Shakspeare prefixed to the folio 1623.) But it was just one of the things which struck with awe the vulgar—the "penny-knaves"—that the great man's tread vibrated the frail structure on which he marched. Hence, Greene happily nicknames the new tragedian, a *Shake-scene*; and that this was meant for a parody on *Shake-speare*, we cannot doubt, when we see that the words in italics, "with his *Tygers heart wrapt in a players hide*" (Reprint, p. 30), parodies one in an early work of Shakspeare's. In "*The True Tragedie of Richard Duke of Yorke, and the death of good King Henrie the Sixt,*" &c. 1595, in the fifth scene, the Duke says to the Queen,

She wolfe of France, but worse than Wolves of France:
Whose tongue more poison'd then the Adders tooth:
How ill beseeeming is it in thy sexe,
To triumph like an Amazonian trull
Upon his woes, whom Fortune captivates! &c.
Oh Tygers hart wrapt in a womans hide!
How couldst thou draine the life bloud of the childe,
To bid the father wipe his eies withall,
And yet be seene to beare a woman's face?

The whole speech is retained in *the third Part of Henry the Sixt*, but much worse printed in the folio 1623 than in the quarto of 1595. This is not the place to settle the vexed question of the authorship of *The True Tragedie*. Three views, however, may be mentioned: (1) that of Malone, that Shakspeare was not the author either of *the First Part of the Contention* or of *The True Tragedie*; but that he appropriated a large part of both plays, when he wrote his *Second and Third Parts of King Henry the Sixt*; (2) that of Mr J. O. Halliwell (Phillipps) that there were older plays, not by Shakspeare, on the subjects of these: and "that when these plays were printed in 1594 and 1595, they included the first additions which Shakspeare had made to the originals" (*Introduction to the First Sketches of the Second and Third Part of King Henry the Sixth*, 1843, p. xix); (3) that Shakspeare was the sole author of these plays in their earliest form. This last view we believe to be utterly untenable. We hold that Marlowe was author, or joint author with Greene, of the older plays, republished as *the First Part of the Contention*, and *The True Tragedie*. If so, a special point might be felt in Greene's parody of the line in question, that possibly being one of those which were written by Marlowe or Greene and formed part of the older plays: and we should then see in the phrase "an upstart crow beautified with our feathers," not merely a player using the work of another man for representation, but a playwright appropriating another man's work, and

incorporating it with his own. But the phrase, as we shall shortly see, admits of a less offensive interpretation.

It is note-worthy that the same line is imitated in *Acolastus his After-Witte* by S[amuel] N[icholson], 1600, where we have,

O woolvish heart, wrapt in a woman's hyde.

S. Nicholson made very free with Shakspeare's *Rape of Lucrece* in this poem, appropriating several entire lines, and imitating others. (See Collier's Biographical and Critical Account: vol. II. p. 47; and also vol. I. Additions, p. xxviii*.) Dr B. Nicholson calls our attention to a similar instance of appropriation in Nicholas Breton's sacred poem, *The Countess of Pembroke's Passion*, in the early stanzas of which he has managed to introduce by two or three lines at a time the greater part of two of Watson's sonnets in his *Tears of Fancie*.

Green's Groats-worth of Wit on its first appearance was variously fathered, by some on Chettle, by others on Nash. The former in his *Kind-Harts Dreame* confesses to his having retrenched the more abusive parts of Greene's tract; but throws the whole credit (or discredit) of the performance on Greene. The latter (Nash) in his *Pierce Pennilessse*, 1593, indignantly repudiates the attribution of Greene's "scald, trivial, lying pamphlet" to himself. I have no doubt that the work was wholly written by Greene, with the reservation of certain parts retrenched or otherwise touched by Chettle; and that it was the genuine and hearty outcome of his repentance, written, moreover, with the kindest motive. It might be thought that the fact of the book being attributed to Nash is an argument against his being "young *Juvenall* [the sweet boy], that byting Satyryst, that lastly with mee [Greene] together writ a Comedie;" strengthened, as it appears to be, by the absence of any proof that Greene and Nash had ever done such a thing: but there is positive evidence of the fact that Nash's nick-name was "young *Juvenal*," that he was at this time a youth of 24 (in fact in his 25th year); and that the epithet "sweet" was lovingly applied to him by some who did not smart under his "byting satire," and perhaps even by one who did—viz. Gabriell Harvey. This we shall shew in its proper place in our *Introduction*. On the other hand, Lodge (who jointly with Greene wrote *A Looking-Glass for London and England*, acted in March 1591-2) was not known as a Satirist till the publication of his *Fig for Momus* in 1595, and was on a sea-voyage from August 26, 1591, till June 11, 1593: and moreover was a man of 34 when he left England. (See Mr Richard Simpson's

Letter in the *Academy* for April 11, 1874, which we have reprinted at the end of the First Part of this *Introduction*.)

We must own that the balance of testimony is in favour of the view first suggested by Dr Farmer, that Thomas Nash was the second of the play-makers addressed by Greene in this strange book, though in making this declaration we are recanting a long-cherished belief.

The student of Shakspeare will find some parallel passages in this tract. The most remarkable of these runs thus:

“For if *sic volo, sic jubeo* hold in those that are able to command: and it be lawfull *Fas et [aut] nefas* to doe any thing, that is beneficiall; onely Tyrants should possesse the earth, and they striving to excede in tyranny, should each to other bee a slaughter man; till the mightiest outliving all, one stroke were left for Death, that in one age mans life should ende” (p. 29).

It would be too much to say that Shakspeare used this (as he did so many other passages in the works of other writers) as the warps of his poetry; but unquestionably its sense is perfectly reproduced in that fine speech of Ulysses, in *Troilus and Cressida*, I. 3, including the lines,

“Then everything includes itself in power,
Power into will, will into appetite;
And appetite, an universal wolf,
So doubly seconded by will and power,
Must make perforce an universal prey,
And last eat up himself.”

A few biographical details of Robert Greene may not be deemed superfluous. This remarkable man was born at Norwich about 1560: graduated A.B. at St John's College, Cambridge, in 1578; and A.M. at Clare Hall, Cambridge, in 1583. In 1588 he was incorporated at Oxford. He took orders, and became Vicar of Tollesbury in Essex, June 19, 1584. His earliest publication was *The Myrrour of Modestie*, 1584. He also became a student in physic: (*Planetomachia*, 1585.) He married about 1586, and died Sept. 2 or 3, 1592, in his 32nd or 33rd year. His last work, printed in his lifetime, was *A Quip for an upstart Courtier*, 1592, which provoked the bitter animosity of Gabriel Harvey. His career and untimely end recal those of Edgar Allan Poe. Both were men of great literary and poetic genius: both were married and childless; both fell victims to excess; and both were indebted to the hospitality of strangers for the last offices paid to a dying man.

II. *Kind-Harts Dreame*, by H[enry] C[hettle], is an early

specimen of the ever common device of making one book out of several disconnected fragments. It is full of interest for us in many ways: but chiefly for its preliminary address "To the Gentlemen Readers." It is here that a supposed allusion to Shakspeare occurs. "About three moneths since died *M. Robert Greene*;" this and the entry in the Stationers' Register fix the date of authorship as December 1592. But whether we possess the first edition is at least doubtful; and Mr J. O. Halliwell (*Life of Shakspeare*, 1848, p. 146, note) gives the preference to the Bodleian copy (formerly the property of Robert Burton) over others; all being without date. Chettle continues thus: "leaving many papers in sundry Booke Sellers hands, among other his Groatsworth of Wit, in which a letter written to divers play-makers is offensively by one or two of them taken," &c.; this doubtless means that Marlowe was galled, by the allusion to his Atheism; and perhaps another of the three had expressed annoyance at the personalities of Greene. Marlowe is the "one of them" with whom Chettle cared not to be acquainted, and "the first, whose learning" Chettle professed to reverence (p. 38, ll. 8 and 17). The chief question for us is, Who was "the other, whome at that time" Chettle did not so much spare as since he wished he had. The late Mr Howard Staunton, in a remarkable letter, dated Jan. 27, communicated to the *Athenæum* of Feb. 7, 1874, argues that "the other" referred to by Chettle could not be Shakspeare, because Greene's letter was, as Chettle says, "written to divers play-makers," and "by one or two of them" offensively taken: and because Shakspeare was not one of the persons addressed, but the chief of those against whom they were warned by Greene. Mr Staunton follows his predecessors in identifying the "famous gracer of tragedians" with Marlowe, and the last of the three, "no lesse deserving then the other two," with George Peele. The second, then, is "the other" of Chettle; and in Mr Staunton's opinion "young Juvenall" (the "sweet boy") is Thomas Nash; and therefore it is concluded that it is Nash to whom Chettle offers the sequent apology. This apology, however, is grounded on the personal testimony of Chettle and others to the *civil demeanour, excellence in his qualitie, uprightnes of dealing* (which argues his *honesty*), as well as the *facetious grace in writing* of the person who had taken Greene's remarks offensively. Now, "young Juvenall" is not charged with any offence whatever, save the use of intemperate or libellous language. To publish a friendly warning, addressed to a public writer, counselling him not to make enemies by bitter words, might indeed be gall and wormwood

to an irritable, overbearing, and self-asserting man : but to apologise for it afterwards, as if his uprightness and honesty had been called in question, would be an absurdity not to be imputed to Chettle. The fact is, that none of the three addressed is assailed for want of any of the qualities which, according to Chettle, were conspicuous in "the other" who had taken Greene's remarks offensively.

But there is a person alluded to under the nick-name of a *Shake-scene*, on whom Greene plainly charges the want of those qualities ; but unfortunately Greene does not address his remarks to that person—but rather talks at him. In fact, Greene addresses, not the "upstart crow," but the three play-makers whom he warns against him. It is not very easy to say what was the *gravamen* of the charge against the "upstart crow." It has hitherto been supposed that he is charged with appropriating other men's writing : and this is Mr Staunton's view ; he holds that the passage in question imputes to the person assailed the offence of having remodelled the theatrical pieces of the persons addressed. But to this view Mr Richard Simpson demurs (*Academy*, April 4, 1874), and though he betrays a little too much eagerness in behalf of Shakspeare's originality, and puts his case too strongly, he is substantially right. "Greene, in calling Shakspeare an upstart crow 'beautified with our feathers,' probably did not mean to accuse Shakspeare of stealing, but simply to call him an actor who had gained applause by spouting the lines of Greene, Marlowe, and Peele." But certainly the expressions "bombast out a blank verse" meant *writing* it ; and the very gist of the nick-name *Johannes fac-totum* is that the person assailed was a Jack of all trades—one who not only put pieces on the boards, and acted in them himself, but essayed to write plays for his own house, and thus intruded on the author's privileged department. That the actual phrase "an upstart crow beautified with our feathers" might mean no more than a player is abundantly proved by the three following quotations which are advanced by Mr Simpson, viz. :

"Why art thou proud with Aesop's crow, being pranked with the glory of others' feathers?" Greene's *Never too Late*, 1590.

Again, "Sundry other sweet gentlemen I do know [besides Greene and Peele] that have vaunted their pens in private devices, and tricked up a company of taffata fools with their feathers, whose beauty, if our poets had not decked [them] with the supply of their periwigs, they might have anticked it until this time up and down the country with the *King of Fairies*, and dined every day at the pease-porridge ordinary with *Delfragus*."—Nash's preface to Greene's *Menaphon*, 1589.

Again, "Notice, by the way," writes Mr Simpson, "that these are the two plays mentioned by the actor to Roberto in the *Groatsworth*. Just in this way, when the degree of LL.D. was offered to the young son of the Duke of Suffolk at Cambridge, in Edward VI's reign, he said, 'who was he to appear among the doctors, and to plume himself, like Aesop's crow, in alien feathers?'"

And lastly, Mr Simpson quotes these lines, which in our judgment scarcely support his view :

"Greene gave the ground, to all that went before him :¹

Nay more, the men that so eclips'd his fame

Purloynde his plumes; can they deny the same?"

Greene's Funerals, by R. B. Gent. 1594.

But the entire passage in *Green's Groatsworth of Wit* means a great deal more than Mr Simpson appears to find in it. It is difficult (as we have said) to realise at this day the excessive odium attaching to the theatrical profession, an odium shared by the playwrights who supplied them with dramatical pieces. But if we do this, we shall be able to understand somewhat of the indignation which the *regular staff* of playwrights must have felt when they found a common player aspiring to the dignity of a playwright, and thus threatening to bring the dramatist's vocation into tenfold discredit, and to defraud the regulars of their pay. Surely it was not in human nature for the ruined and dying Greene to hold his peace, when he found the great shadow of this New Reputation cast on the field occupied by himself, Marlowe, Peele, and some others: keeping these considerations in view, Greene's language will seem quite natural and unstrained, without resorting to the hypothesis that Shakspeare's conduct was, in his view, more than *constructively dishonest*. In fact, believing that the *Shake-scene* was Shakspeare, we can very well see that his noiseless yet strenuous aggrandisement as a tragic and comic writer, an advent of dramatic genius for which there appeared no adequate preparation, must have provoked both to jealousy and to admiration the men whose functions were thus superseded: and that they would see in the advantage so taken of them some evidence of dishonesty. On this view alone there was reason for Chettle's apology, when he found that Shakspeare was not only a man of exquisite grace in writing, but of gentle and honest life. But further, we may suppose that Chettle saw that Greene's insolence bore a construction prejudicial to Shakspeare's

¹ "Went before him;" i. e. were preferred before him, and so far eclipsed him. Surely these lines bring a direct charge of dishonesty against Greene's later competitors in play-writing.

honesty; and if so, there was an additional reason for the apology.

The difficulty however remains, that Chettle distinctly says that he is apologising for one of the three to whom Greene wrote his epistle; and most assuredly the "upstart crow" is not addressed at all. The only explanation which occurs to me, is that we have Greene's remarks in an imperfect form. Chettle owns to having retrenched some of the more abusive passages in Greene's manuscript; and it is no very violent assumption that he cut out some highly offensive passage in which Greene apostrophised the *Shake-scene*; and that when Chettle wrote the apology prefixed to *Kind-Harts Dreame* he remembered the apostrophe, but forgot the omission. This view is countenanced by some remarks in Gabriel Harvey's *Third Letter*, to which we shall shortly have to call attention. We must add, that Mr Staunton's letter was replied to with great ability by Mr Richard Simpson in the letter which we have reprinted.

In Chettle's tract the five "invectives against abuses reigning" may be thus summarised:

1. Against the liberty of ballad-printing; by Anthony Now-now.
2. Against quack-salving; by Dr Burcot.
3. Robert Greene to Pierce Pennilesse (i. e. Thos. Nash).
4. A plea for public amusements; by Richard Tarleton.
5. Against juggling; by William Cuckoe.

A word on some of these "Apparitions." *Anthony Now now* is the nickname of an itinerant fiddler. Dr E. F. Rimbault (*Percy Soc. Tracts*, vol. v. p. 63) quotes an old ballad from *the Second Part of the Gentlecraft*, by Thomas Deloney, 1598, of which the refrain is

O Anthony, now, now, now;

where it is said, "Anthony in his absence sung this song so often in S. Martins, that thereby he purchast a name which hee never lost till his dying day, for ever after men cald him nothing but *Anthony Now now*." This Anthony has been supposed to be Anthony Munday, but without a vestige of reason.¹ The like

¹ On this point Dr B. Nicholson writes to us, as follows:—

"Some time ago I read this part of K. H. Dreame very carefully, and with the view of examining this supposition. I could not find one word in support, rather many showed me that A. Now now was a known but yet merely an itinerant street-fiddler, with nothing to connect him with Meres' 'best plotter.' So in Munday's history I know nothing which would connect him with a street-fiddler origin. He was an author in 1579, in Rome before 1582, a translator probably from the Italian 1584 (see *Coll. Ann.* of 81, III. 241); would he then in 1592 be spoken of merely in the terms used in K. H. Dreame? It is hazardous reasoning from negatives, but Jonson in his depreciation of him says nothing of street-fiddling. The origin of the supposition appears to have arisen as in the Museum copy of K. H. D., where the

refrain occurs in a ballad at the end of *Le Prince d'Amour*, 1660. Of *Dr Burcot* nothing is known. *Richard Tarleton* was the most famous extravagant Comedian of Elizabeth's reign. The earliest mention of him is as the author of a ballad in *The Floods of Bedfordshire*. He died Sept. 1588 (Rimbault, *ibid.* p. 63). References to him and his famous "jigge" are frequent in the old literature. Dr Rimbault compares Chettle's description of Tarleton with that given in *Tarllon's Newes out of Purgatorie*. *William Cuckoe* was doubtless an itinerant juggler; but his name, or nickname, has not been found in any other work.

Kind-Hart was the conventional name of an itinerant tooth-drawer, and it occurs frequently in the literature of this period. *Plaine Percevall*, 1589, says "if [thou wilt have thy Colts tooth drawne] gently, let me be thy tooth-drawer, I have a kind hart of mine owne, and that name hath been good at such a practise heretofore." Dr Rimbault quotes five couplets from *The Letting of Humours Blood in the Head Vaine*, 1600, in which is the line

"Not as Kind-heart, in drawing out a tooth."

III. *Englandes Mourning Garment*, by Henry Chettle, though out of chronological order, is next reprinted. Its title-page has neither name nor date; but the allusions to the death of Elizabeth as a recent event prove that it was printed in 1603, and the address "To the Reader," immediately before the colophon, signed "Hen. Chettle," claims the principal work as his, through the accident of correcting *Hewres* (or as he quotes it *Herores*) which the printer had set up for *Heroes*, on p. 98.

The part which immediately concerns us is the second verse-fragment, extending from p. 97 to p. 99. Of course "the Arcadian Shepheards inchaunting phrase of speaking," at foot of p. 96, alludes to Sir Philip Sidney, and "the excellent and cunning *Collin*" on p. 97, is Edmund Spenser, from whom Chettle appears to quote the couplet, which serves for motto of the sequent pro-lusion; though we have not found it in Spenser's works.

In the pro-lusion itself there are eleven allusions,

He that so well could sing the fatal strife
Betweene the royall Roses White and Red,

is Samuel Daniel, of whose *Civile Wares betweene the Howses of Lancaster and Yorke*, four books were published in 1595, the fifth

similarity of the Christian name (a very common one at that time) has led some one to scribble Munday on the margin. See also W. Webbe's notice of Munday in his *Disc. on Engl. P.* 1586 (p. 35 of Arbr. reprint)."

in 1599, and the sixth in 1602, the remaining two not appearing till 1609.

He that sung fortie yeares her life and birth,
And is by English Albions so much famde,

is William Warner, whose *Albion's England* was published in 1586.

Coryn full of worth and wit,
That finisht dead *Musæus* gracious song,

is, of course, the illustrious George Chapman, the continuator and ender of that noble work which Marlowe (who had been "dead" ten years in 1603) left unfinished; viz., the *Hero and Leander* of *Musæus*.

On the next page

our English *Horace*, whose steele pen
Can drawe Characters which will never die,

is doubtless the *Horace Junior* of Dekker, i. e. Ben Jonson. The next allusion we will consider at greater length hereafter. "Sweete singer *Coridon*" is Michael Drayton, identified by the reference to his *Isabel* and his *Poly-olbion*, here called by a press-error, *Poly Albion*. "Delicious sportive *Musidore*" is probably Thomas Lodge, who had renounced poetry for medicine; whence the allusion,

Although thou have resigned thy wreath of Bay.

But as Chettle does not elsewhere allude to *Thomas Greene*, *Musidore* may be he; the probability however is the other way: and other poets as prominent as that Greene are also ignored, as Wm. Browne, George Wither, John Reynolds, &c. "Quicke *Anti-horace*" is, of course, Thomas Dekker, and "yong *Mælibee*" must be John Marston; and lastly, "*Heroes* last *Musæus*" should be Henry Petowe, who published in 1598 *The Second Part of the Loves of Hero and Leander*, which was, like Chapman's, a continuation of Marlowe's poem.

In this prolusion Chettle complains that none of these poets had celebrated in verse the memory of Queen Elizabeth, then lately dead: and amongst them he thus speaks of another poet in these terms:

Nor doth the silver tonged *Melicert*,
Drop from his honied muse one sable teare
To mourne her death that graced his desert,
And to his laies opend her Royall eare,
Shepherd, remember our *Elizabeth*,
And sing her Rape, done by that *Tarquin*, death.

The concluding couplet shows pretty plainly that by *Melicert*,

Chettle meant Shakspeare. It is quite certain that he intended no allusion to the ancient story of Melicerta (or Melicertus); but the second line renders it likely that he had an eye to the possible etymology of the word, μέλι, honey, and κηρός, bees-wax, or κηρίον, comb; so that Melicert would be Honeycomb, or the "honied muse," from which his verse distilled. We must here bear in mind that in a poem (1598) attributed to Barnefield, Shakspeare's Muse is spoken of as his "honey-flowing Vaine;" and that Weever in his 22nd Epigram (1595) and Meres (1598) call our Bard "Honey-tongued *Shakspeare*." (See postea, pp. 159, 180, 184.) Whence one might almost conclude that it was proverbial to associate "honey" with Shakspeare's early writings. Melicertus, however, is named by Chettle on p. 87 of *Englandes Mourning Garment*, and by Robert Greene in his *Menaphon*; and naturally the question has been raised whether in these three allusions we have three or two, or only one real person. In entering upon this question, it is necessary to be on our guard against supposing that there was anything like an appropriation of a pastoral or other nickname, at least beyond the lifetime of the bearer. Thus Chettle dubs himself Colin, mainly *because* Spenser had been called so (see *E. M. Garment*, p. 97); and many poets were called Melibœus: and so forth. Chettle thus associates three poets of mark (p. 87):

"O, saith *Thenot*, in some of those wrongs resolve us, and thinke it no unfitting thing, for thou that hast heard the songs of that warlike Poet *Philesides*, good *Melæbee*, and smooth-tongued *Melicert*, tell us what thou hast observed in their sawes, seene in thy owne experience, and heard of undoubted truths touching those accidents: for that they adde, I doubt not, to the glory of our *Eliza*."

The plot thickens. We have now to discriminate all three names, Philesides and Melibee, as well as Melicert, and to identify them if we can. Assuredly no change can be got out of the assumption that the same poet is, as a matter of course, alluded to under the same name. Mr Richard Simpson, in his *Introduction to A Larum for London or the seige of Antwerp* (Longmans, 1872) pp. 2 and 3, appears to do this. Speaking of the passage we have just quoted, he writes—

"Probably the reason why this reference to Shakspeare under the name of Melicert, has not obtained the attention it deserves is the fact that none of these topics [the relations of the English to the Spanish] are discussed in any of his recognised works. It is remarkable how silent they all are on Spanish matters, which during a great part of his life were the occasion of anxiety and even panic to the whole country. The other two poets who, in common with Shakspeare, touched upon Spanish perfidy to England, were 'the warlike poet Philesides, and good Melibee.'

The first is not again mentioned by Chettle, and cannot therefore be identified from his pamphlet. Many of the Elizabethan poets were also soldiers; Gascoigne, Churchyard, Raleigh, Sidney, Barnaby Rich, Barnaby George, Gervase Markham, and others. Any of these may be Philesides. The good Melibee, on the other hand, is subsequently addressed as the 'young Melibee,' the friend of Antihorace or Decker. This goes far to identify him with Marston; and this conclusion is much strengthened when we find Chettle's friend Drayton, two years later, addressing Marston as 'good Melibeus' who

Down from the goodly Western waste,
To drink at Avon, drivest thy sunned sheep.

Marston was married to a daughter of the rector of Banford St Martin, in Wiltshire, and had apparently settled with his wife at Christchurch in Hampshire."

This is Mr R. Simpson's case; and we must candidly own that we think it is a very weak one. For ourselves, we have not the least doubt that Philesides, or Philisides, is Sir Philip Sidney; for it was under this name that Sidney figured himself in his *Arcadia*; and when Chettle wrote we may be quite sure that all readers saw in Philesides no other poet than Sidney. Again in the *Pastoral Æclogue upon the Death of Sidney*, printed with *Colin Clout's Come home again*, 1595, Sidney is addressed as *Philesides*. The truth is, the name is simply a compound of Phil[ip] Sid[ney] with a connecting vowel and a Greek termination. Mr C. Elliot Browne (*Notes and Queries*, 4th S. xii. 510) corroborates these arguments by quoting from the Earl of Stirling's *Supplement of the Defect*, 1621, a note in which the Earl apologizes for several divergences from the plan of the *Arcadia*,

"specially in the death of Philesides making choice of a course whereby I might best manifest what affection I beare to the memorie of him whom I tooke to be alluded unto by that name, and whom I only by this imperfect parcell (denying more) had a mind to honour,"

clearly referring to the fall of Sidney on the field of Zutphen. Further, as Mr C. E. Browne points out, the Earl thus describes his hero: "Philisides [was] a Muroni of courage and courtesie, of learning and armes;—so that it seemed that Mars had begotten him upon one of the Muses."

The identification of Chettle's *Philesides* with Sidney is the cardinal point in the interpretation of the prose passage; and therefore we make no apology for reprinting the following remarks on that point from an admirable paper by Dr Brinsley Nicholson (*Notes and Queries*, 5th S. i. 109). We agree with him that we may positively assert Philesides, as well as Philisides, to be Sir Philip Sidney; and that we must not allow this identification to be disputed, whatever may be its consequences.

First, Alexander, in his addition to the third book of the *Arcadia*, makes Philesides die of a wound in the thigh from an empoisoned dart thrown by an unknown hand, and Sidney died of a chance bullet wound in the thigh, which, ending in in-

ward mortification, seemed to confirm the belief that shot wounds were poisoned wounds. [*Secondly*,] Philisides' calm death and quiet address to his friends is an imitation of Sidney's, and the desire to live in their friends' memories is common to both deathbed speeches. [*Thirdly*,] The history of the "tilting in Iberia (where I was borne) dedicated to the memorie of the Queen Andromanes marriage,"—when a novice in armes he, with Musidorus, Pyrocles, and others in their train, ran in a pastoral show against the Corinthian knights,—is a plain reference to the magnificent tournament and show before the French embassy that came over to negotiate the marriage with the Duke of Anjou in 1581, and in which Sidney, Fulke Greville, the Earl of Arundel, and the Lord Windsor were the challengers and knights of Desire that attacked the Fortresse of Perfect Beautie. In the chroniclers (see Nichols' *Progr.*), the feats of arms in this tournament are described in much the same glowing terms as those used by Alexander's Philisides. *Fourthly*, Sidney writing, Philisides speaks autobiographically of himself in

"The song I sang old Lanquet [*i. e.* Languet] had me taught" (Arc., B. III.), and thus identifies himself with Sidney. *Fifthly*, the second book of Browne's *Britannia's Pastorals* is dedicated to William, Earl of Pembroke (1616); and in one of the commendatory verses, probably by Wm. Herbert, we have,

"Hee masters no low soul who hopes to please
The Nephew of the brave Philisides."

As to the name of *Melibee*, Mr C. E. Browne, in the note from which we have already quoted, suggests "that Melibee and Melicert were dead Statesmen, not living poets; that, in fact, the allusions in the political portion of the work [of Chettle] are entirely independent of those in the poetical part, and refer, perhaps, to Walsingham and Burghley, who, with Sidney, were associated together in the popular mind, as the three great leaders of the Anti-Spanish policy." Mr Browne specifies these reasons for this view:

1. The nature of Collin's narrative, which reads more like a *pièce justificative* or State paper than anything likely to be derived from a drama or poem. The context also clearly shows that the writer is referring to a past state of the Spanish question, and to a period when Shakspeare and Marston were little more than children.

2. The use of the word "sawes," which although certainly not excluding the idea of poetry, has primarily, I think, a graver meaning. Shakspeare has "holy sawes of sacred writ" (*Hen. IV.*, part ii., i. 3), and Marston, in *What you will*, speaks of

"— the musty sawe
Of antick Donate."

3. The great improbability that any work which at this time (1603) was well known to have been written by Shakspeare would be allowed to perish.

4. The curious infelicity of the word "good," if applied to such a professor of strong language as Marston, and the unlikelihood that he would be coupled with Sidney.

5. Thomas Watson had celebrated Walsingham under the name of Melibœus in his *Eclogue* of 1590. Statesmen and politicians, as well as poets, were spoken of pastorally as shepherds. Lodge has introduced Burghley in his eclogues as Eglon, and there is the well-known epitaph on Robin ascribed to Raleigh.

As to the origin and employment of the name *Melicert*, Mr Browne writes:—

It is scarcely likely that Chettle intended to allude to the son of Ino, who was no shepherd, but it is probable, I think, that he referred to the *Melicertus* of Greene's *Menaphon*, one of the principal characters in the most popular fiction of Shakspeare's old antagonist, and whether Chettle originated or only applied the compliment, it shows, at any rate, the continuance of the good understanding which had been commenced by the *amende* made to Shakspeare ten years before in *Kind Heart's Dreame*. Greene's *Melicertus* had been a shepherd "elsewhere" before he came to Arcadia, and though himself born to "base fortunes," yet knowing that "Venus loved Adonis, and Luna Endymion, that Cupid had bolts feathered with the plumes of a crow as well as with the pen of an eagle," he devoted himself to a mistress of much higher rank than himself. She dies, or appears to die, very suddenly, and the wretched *Melicertus*, after the manner of the pastoral romances, retires into Arcadia to keep sheep, where he meets with the beautiful shepherdess, Samela, who in the end turns out to be his former mistress, still alive. *Melicertus* contends with *Menaphon* for the mastery of the shepherds. "Am I not the king's shepherd," says *Menaphon*, "and chief of all the bordering swains of Arcadia?" "I grant," quoth *Melicertus*, "but am not I a gentleman, though tired in a shepherd's skin-coat, superior to thee in birth, though equal now in profession?" Their rival pretensions are decided by a kind of poetical tournament, and *Melicertus* is declared the winner. The character was evidently a favourite with Greene, who has put into his mouth the best poetry in the book. There are certainly some points of resemblance between *Melicertus* and the traditional idea of Shakspeare. *Melicertus* is a great maker of sonnets, and after his poetical excellence, the leading quality ascribed to him is the possession of a very ready and smooth wit, which enables him to shine in the euphuistic chaffing-matches with which the work is interlarded.

Dr Brinsley Nicholson, in the note from which we have made one extract, replies to Mr Browne as to the names, *Melibee*, and *Melicert*. As Dr Nicholson's paper is exceedingly able, we make no apology for giving nearly all the rest of it *in extenso* :

Next, as to "good *Melibee*." Thenot asks Collin—that is, Chettle, who, as appears from another passage in the *Mourning Garment*, was then about fifty—what had been said by wise men of old as to certain state events of their times. He asks Collin, one of the passing generation, what he had heard from men of his own and a past generation as to the causes of war between Spain and England in 1586 or 7. Now here it is to be noted that, Spenser being dead, Chettle wittingly calls himself "Collin," acknowledging that he takes the name in these words—"I cannot now forget the excellent and cunning Collin indeed (for alas I confesse my selfe too too rude)." And it is to be noted, in that it is, as I believe, one of the three examples in the book of the re-giving of a pastoral name after the first owner's death. *Melibee* is a second instance. The "good *Melibee*" of this passage I have for some time taken to be Walsingham, as suggested by MR ELLIOT BROWNE, not only because Watson so called him in his eclogue on his death, but because Spenser in reference to this very eclogue calls him, in *The Ruins of Time* (1591), by the epithet which Chettle, as Collin the second, takes from him—

“ Good Melibee, that hath a poet got
To sing his living praises being dead.”

But this good Melibee being dead, Chettle, speaking of poets now alive, calls Marston the friend of Anti-Horace Dekker, not good Melibee nor even Melibee, but “ young Melibee.” The error of thinking that “ songs ” in pastorals necessarily meant songs or plays, and not the sayings, or as the text glosses it “ saws,” of the persons spoken of, according as they were poets, statesmen, or prose writers, and non-attention to this distinctive epithet young, have led to Mr R. Simpson’s curious mistakes in his Introduction to the *Siege of Antwerp*. As Mr BROWNE justly says, Marston, in 1586, or even 1588, was but a child. Again, Walsingham, being dead in 1590, Drayton, not bound by Chettle’s authority, or probably writing some time before 1603, applies the name Melibee to some one who was either related to, or a great friend of, Sidney, and of a station at least equal with Sidney’s or Walsingham’s. In his eclogue lament of Sidney he says (Ecl. vi.)—

“ Thou that down from the goodly western waste
To drink at Avon driv’st thy sunned sheep,
Good Melibœus that so wisely hast
Guided the flocks delivered thee to keep,
Forget not Elphin.”

And then in similar strains he adjures

“ Alexis that dost with thy flocks remain
Far off within the Caledonian ground.”

Now this Melibœus cannot be Walsingham, because the latter had no connexion by birth or property with Salisbury Plain and Wiltshire, and because we know that this eclogue is a re-written form of a previous lament published in 1593. Nor can he be Marston, as Mr SIMPSON would again have it, for first the words and the context show that statesmen or nobles are spoken of; secondly, because Marston was then a young man about town writing plays, and, in 1605, imprisoned for writing *Eastward Ho*; thirdly, because though his father-in-law, or future father-in-law, as a clergyman in Wilts, might have had sheep to keep there, Marston had none; and, fourthly, because all that we know or rather can suppose of Marston’s place of residence after he ranged himself is that it was at Coventry. But, as I have said, the poem, by its subject and wording, was probably written long before its supposed date of publication in or about 1605 (for the volume has no date), and its good Melibœus is, I should say, the husband of Mary Sidney, Countess of Pembroke.

Lastly, as to Melicert. I confess that though the conjunction of Sidney, Walsingham, and Shakspeare was a strange one, I was inclined to think that Chettle could not have given the same name to two people in one book. But, since reading Mr ELLIOT BROWNE’S note, and reconsidering the matter, I believe that the smooth-tongued Melicert of the Philisides and Melibee trio must have been a statesman or person of eminence, and the significant name Honeycomb, or he of the honeycomb, agrees well with Ascham’s notice of Burghley in his Introduction to his *Schoolmaster*, and with the description given for instance in Chalmers’ *Biography*. The same consideration is, I believe, the common key of the three examples. Colin dead, Chettle adopts the name; Walsingham dead, Drayton gives the name Melibœus to another of eminence, probably the Earl of Pembroke, who died 1601; and both being gone, Chettle gives it, with the distinctive adjunct young, to a new poet; Melicert the statesman, being dead, Chettle applies it, when speaking of living poets, to Shakspeare of the honied muse.

Clearly, if it be a condition of identification, that all three shepherds shall be poets, or at least well-known versifiers (and this is *primâ facie* the inference from Chettle’s use of the word *songs*), Mr C. E. Browne’s conjecture, that “ the smooth-tongued

Melicert" is Burghley, is put out of court. Apart from this condition, we do not understand Dr Nicholson to give Burghley the decided preference over every competitor; for manifestly Lord Buckhurst would equally well fit the place, besides satisfying the condition of being a song-writer; and for choice, perhaps we should give the preference to the latter, as the associate of Sidney and Walsingham in Chettle's* prose. Meanwhile the phrase "smooth-tongued Melicert" is perhaps too vague to furnish ground for more than a plausible guess.

Yet, after all, it is by no means certain that by *songs* Chettle had in view the lyrical or other poetical performances of the three personages in question: for *in a pastoral work, the prose judgments of the real men would be described as the songs of the shepherds*; and that being so, the allusion is altogether too indefinite to be spotted. On the other hand, Philesides being called a Poet, the *songs* in his case would seem to be actual poetical performances; and if so, it would be difficult to contend that the word has not the same meaning in the reference to the other two.

The chief point of interest in Dr Nicholson's paper, is the doctrine, now first propounded, that literary nick-names not infrequently lapsed on the death of their owners, and were revived in certain of their survivors. If we are right in identifying Philesides, Melibee, and Melicert in Chettle's prose, with Sidney, Walsingham, and Buckhurst, we may very well look for those names in association with others after their former owners had passed away. Thus Walsingham and Buckhurst being dead, it is the most natural thing in the world for Chettle to bestow them on Marston and Shakspeare.

To persons unaccustomed to the literary practices of those times it must seem almost incredible that in his prose Chettle should speak of the *songs* of "good *Melibee* and smooth-tongued *Melicert*," and in his verse prolusion (in the same work) of "the silver-tonged *Melicert*" and "yong *Mælibee*," and not intend to designate the same two personages by the latter as by the former pair of nick-names. But we believe that there is really nothing incredible in the supposition. On the contrary, we have shown that the very attempt to restrict the allusions to two persons only, involves the question in a mesh of absurdities.

At page 61 is a passage which recalls the magniloquent speech of the King in *Hamlet* :

Do not feare our person :
There's such Divinity doth hedge a King,
That Treason can but peepe to what it would,
Acts little of his will.

In Chettle's tract Colin says of Queen Elizabeth,

"Such majestie had her presence, and such boldnesse her heart, that she despised all feare; and was, as all Princes are, or shall be, so full of divine fulnesse [?], that guiltie mortalitie durst not beholde her but with dazeled eyes."

In 1591 Chettle became a partner with William Hoskins and John Danter in a printing business (Ames, *Typ. Ant.* by Herbert, ii. 1113). That he died about 1607 may be inferred from Dekker's *Knight's Conjuring, Done in Earnest, Discovered in Jest*, published in that year, where Chettle is introduced, as a new comer, into the limbo of poets. A list of Chettle's writings is given in Mr H. Barrett Leonard's *Introduction* to his edition of *The Tragedy of Hoffman; or, A Revenge for a Father*, 1631, the only extant play of those which Chettle wrote alone. This list contains, besides one translated and four original works, sixteen plays of which Chettle was sole author, and thirty-one plays which he wrote in conjunction with another or others. Only three or four of the latter are extant.

We know but very few biographical details of Henry Chettle. Dr Rimbault's researches have added but little to the slender stock of his predecessors. Henry Chettle was born about the year 1564-5. He had a child named Mary buried in the Church of St John, New Windsor. The inscription upon her tomb, which is preserved in Ashmole's *Antiquities of Berkshire*, 1719, iii. 75, is as follows:—

Here lyeth the Body
of MARY CHETTLE,
The Daughter of Henry Chettle; who
dy'd the 22 of
September 1595. Ætatis Suae 12.
In Memory of whom, Robert Gwine,
Yeoman of the Guard,
hath caus'd this to be done.

IV., V. In connection with *Englandes Mourning Garment* we take *A Mournfull Dittie* and I. C.'s *Epigrame*, the latter referring to that and other ballads published upon the accession of James. We are unable to identify I. C. In the old catalogue of the Bodleian Library, the volume of *Epigrammes* is given under E, and is attributed to John Elsum: but in correcting this for the new Catalogue, the clerk has placed the work under C. (I) only, and cancelled the entry under Elsum. In Lowndes' B. M. the initials are altered and expanded into J. Can., on what authority, and with what view, we are unable to say. Anyhow, John Elsum can hardly be the author, if he be rightly credited there with two

books respectively dated 1700 and 1704. The uncomplimentary style in which I. C. speaks of the ballad-writers of the day, as
 "The hated Fathers of vilde balladrie,"
 and also as

'the slanderers of the time,'

is accounted for in a sonnet prefixed to Robert Anton's *Philosophers satyrs*, 1616 :

To his ingenious friend, R. A. [Robert Anton.]

Desert [*sic*] and praise are Twins. The first being quicke,
 The second still is so; or if it die,
 Then is the first too sound, or else too sicke,
 And so may dye in grace, or Envies eye!
 But this with wonder in my stomacke stickes,
 That Satyrs wrapt but in base Balladrie
 Are praised beyond the moone (of lunatickes)
 As being sun-begot; so cannot die.
 Needes must I hugge the Muse, and praise the pen
 Of him that makes his Satires dance a brall
 Unto the musicke of the speares even then
 When as the planets footed it withall:
 Thou sharply singst, but he the burden beares
 That would have songe more sharpe but for his eares.

I. D.

The allusion in the 11th and 12th lines to Sir John Davies' *Orchestra* inclines us to believe that the signature I. D. stands for his name. The truth is that not a few of the poets of the time were envious of the popularity which greeted the political ballads, due not to their literary merit, but to their scurrility, and to the impunity enjoyed by the authors, which they owed to their obscurity.

VI. We have reprinted Gabriel Harvey's *Third Letter* for his remarkable notices of Robert Greene (pp. 130-133, 139, 142), and for his supposed allusions to Shakspeare (pp. 130, 148), viz. "The worst of the four," and "one whom I salute with a hundred blessings." We know otherwise that Harvey was a great admirer of Shakspeare's writings; for we learn from George Steevens (Ed. of Sh. 1766) that Harvey had written on a blank leaf of Speght's Chaucer,

"The younger sort take much delight in Shakespeare's Venus and Adonis; but his Lucrece, and his tragedy of Hamlet, Prince of Denmarke, have it in them to please the wiser sort. 1598."

The editors of the Clarendon Press Ed. of Shakespeare (*Hamlet*, 1872, p. ix.) write thus:—

"Steevens . . . attributed to the note the date of the book, but Malone has shewn that, although Harvey may have purchased the volume in 1598, there is nothing to prove that he wrote the note till after 1600, in which year Fairfax's translation of Tasso, mentioned in another note, was published."

If the book could be found we might possibly set this question at rest ; but unfortunately, after making search, we have been unable to trace it. It belonged to Bishop Percy, then Dean of Carlisle, and was probably destroyed in 1780 with his *first* Library in the fire at Northumberland House.¹

This letter, long-winded and verbose as it is, is interesting for its connection with *Green's Groats-worth of Wit*. On p. 130 Greene is abused for his voluminous writings, being called "*Greene with the running Head, and the scribbling Hand, that never linnes [i. e. ceases] putting forth new, newer, and newest books of the maker.*" Harvey then says, "*Green, vile Greene, would thou wearest [wert] halfe so honest, as the worst of the foure, whom thou upbraidest: or halfe so learned, as the unlearnedst of the three.*" That is, half as honest as Shakspeare, or half as learned as Nash: the four being, as we have seen, Marlow, Peele, Nash, and Shakspeare. "Thanke other for thy borrowed and filched plumes of some little Italianated bravery: and what remaineth, but flat Impudence, and grosse Detraction: the proper ornaments of thy sweete utterance?" This clearly alludes to Greene's attack on the *Shake-scene*. He had called Shakspeare "an upstart crow beautified with our feathers." Harvey now retaliates on Greene, and tells him that his plumes are borrowed and filched from the Italian stories.

Harvey here, also, seems to apply to Nash the expression "good *sweet* orator."

The motto, "Omne tulit punctum," is that of Greene's *Oberon*, and not improbably appears on other of his writings.

VII. We have next taken "Five Sections of *Palladis Tamia*," out of their chronological order, with the view of preserving the series of works which contain any notice or have any bearing upon the first of our *Allusion-Books*.

Wits Common-Wealth is a generic title for (probably) four distinct works, which were a series of literary commonplace books, containing miscellaneous jottings on important truths, and also on notable persons, with their wise or witty sayings. The book which gave this name to the series bears the title

(1) *Politeuphuia*, *Wits Common-Wealth*, 1597. It was a compilation by John Bodenham, and such was its popularity, that it was from time to time "newly corrected and amended," and passed through eighteen editions before the Restoration of

¹ The worthy Bishop's *second* Library now forms part of that of Ambrose Isted, Esq., of Ecton Hall, Northamptonshire.

Charles II., and twenty-two before the abdication of his successor. A copy of this edition was in the catalogue of Asher of Berlin, for 1844. The second edition of 1598 was issued conjointly with

(2) *Palladis Tamia*. Wits Treasury, being the second part of Wits Commonwealth. By Francis Meres, 1598. Then followed the third part, which Mr W. C. Hazlitt believes to be "Wit's Theatre of the Little World," (N. Ling) 1599: but we think this hardly likely. Lastly,

(4) *Palladis Palatium*: Wisedomes Pallace, or the fourth part of Wit's Commonwealth, (G. Elde for Francis Burton) 1604.

Of the second of these works we reprint from leaf 275 to leaf 288 of the first edition. In this short compass we have nine references to Shakspeare by name, and mention is made of his two principal poems, his sonnets, and twelve of his plays, including *Love[s] Labours Wonne*, which has not been satisfactorily identified with any of the plays in our collection. For one thing, we do not think it likely to be *All's well that ends well*, as Farmer conjectured, which, in our opinion, offers no sufficient resemblance or contrast to serve as a pendant to *Loves Labours Lost*. Meres has also one quotation from I *Hen. IV.* ii. 3; and on leaf 286, what is more important for our purpose, we find the most curious notices of R. Greene, G. Harvey, Nash, Peele, and Marlowe. Here we obtain the evidence of Nash being nicknamed "young juvenall" and being called "sweet"—whether boy or Tom matters not.

"As Actæon was woored of his owne hounds: so is Tom Nash of his *Isle of Dogs*. Dogges were the death of Euripedes, but bee not disconsolate, gallant young *Juvenall*, Linus, the Sonne of *Apollo* died the same death. Yet God forbid that so brave a witte should so basely perish, thine are but paper dogges, neither is thy banishment like *Ovids*, eternally to converse with the barbarous *Getes*. Therefore comfort thy selfe sweet *Tom*."

VIII. Spenser's AETION has been identified with Shakspeare on two grounds. (1) because

"A gentler shepherd may nowhere be found;"

and *gentle* was the proverbial prefix to his Christian and surname: (2) because his name,

"Doth like himselfe heroically sound;"

and *Shake-speare* was *par excellence* an heroic name, and our Shakspeare was the author of heroic histories. As to the first point: we may very well demand the evidence of the assertion that Shakspeare was proverbially called "gentle Shakspeare," or "gentle Will;" and to this we shall find no answer till we come to those who wrote of him regretfully after his death. That he was re-

membered as such *then* is no proof that he was recognized in his lifetime as the "gentle shepherd." As to the second point: we remark that, just as Chettle, calling Shakspeare *Melicert* (Honeycomb), expounds its meaning by referring to "his honied Muse;" so may Spenser be expanding the classical nickname *Aëtion*, by referring to its heroic sound. If this be so, what poet soever may be alluded to under that heroic name, the last two lines are perfectly intelligible.

But for ourselves, we must own to a pretty strong conviction that *Aëtion* is applied by Spenser to Shakspeare. Doubtless, so far as concerns the heroic name *Aëtion* (*i. e.* 'Αερίων, from *ἀερος*, an eagle,¹) meaning the man of eagle-flight, Spenser might just as well be celebrating Warner, Drayton, or Daniell, all of whom had dealings with the heroic muse. Mr W. Minto, indeed, remembering that Drayton had first written under the heroic name of *Rowland*, is convinced that *Aëtion* is Drayton, whose "high thoughts invention" is sufficiently shown in his *Barons' Warres* and other works (*Academy*, January 24, 1874). Mr J. O. Halliwell (Phillipps), on the other hand, was in 1848 disposed to see in that expression an allusion to *Albion's England*, and found an heroic sound in *Warner* (*Life of Shakespeare*, p. 142). But *Shake-speare* is the typical name of martial achievement as surely as his series of heroic dramas, English and Roman, are matchless in English literature.

In proof of our assertion as to Shakspeare's surname, take the following: Fuller compares him to *Martial* (the Roman poet) for "the warlike sound of his Surname (whence some may conjecture him of a *Military extraction*), *Hastivibrans*, or *Shake-speare*." (*The Worthies of England*, 1662, pp. 120.)

The name, too, is perfectly represented by either of two Greek words, 'Εγχεσπάλος and Δορίπαλτος. There could not be better proof, than is afforded by these equivalents in the classical languages, that the act of shaking the speare was a recognized type of all martial deeds. In many places the act itself is described. The following may serve as examples of the heroic and the mock-heroic:

"He all enraged, his shivering speare did shake,
And charging him afresh thus felly him bespake."
(*Faerie Queen*, b. iv. c. iii. st. 10.)

¹ Malone's two attempts at the etymology of this name (*Variorum*, 1621, ii. 274) are a caution to ambitious editors. He was ignorant of the only two essentials: he neither knew that *Aëtion* was a recognized Greek surname; nor that it took its rise from the Greek word for *Eagle*. See *Shakspeare's Centurie of Prayse*, 1874, p. 73-4; and the *Academy* for January 10, 1874. Our note in the former was printed six months too early to profit by that of Mr Hales.

“ Behold, behold, thy garter blue,
Thy knight his valiant elboe weares,
That when he *shakes* his furious *speare*,
The foe in shivering fearefull sort,
May lay him downe in death to snort.”

(*Histrionastix, or, the Player whipt*, 1610. Sig. C. 4 recto.)

Finally, we have the name designated in an undated work of the time, entitled *Polydoron* :

“ Names were first questionlesse given for distinction, facultie, consanguinitie, desert, qualitie: for Smith, Taylor, Joyner, Saddler, &c., were doubtlesse of the trades; Johnson, Robinson, Williamson, of the blood; Sackville, Saville, names of honourable desert; Armstrong, Shakespeare of high qualitie.”

In our recently-published work, *Shakespeare's Centurie of Prayse*, p. 10, we have referred this poem to the period April 16—December 27, in the year 1594, believing, with Malone and Halliwell, that 1591 at the foot of the dedication was a misprint for 1594; i. e. the period elapsed between the death of Lord Derby and the supposed date of the dedication. As there are difficulties to clear up in this matter of date, we have submitted it to Mr J. W. Hales, who sends us the following remarks:—

“ *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* was not published till 1595; but there is no reason for doubting that it was in the main written by the time mentioned in the Dedicatory letter to Sir Walter Raleigh, viz. December, 1591. Spenser crossed over to England in 1589; he probably returned to Ireland in 1591, but he may have done so in 1590. That he was back in Ireland sometime in 1591 may be confidently concluded from the words of ‘the Printer to the gentle reader’ prefixed to ‘Complaints; containing sundrie small poemes of the world's vanitie’; see the Globe Edition of Spenser's Works, p. xlv. In the quiet of Kilcolman his thoughts would naturally recall his recent sojourn in the midst of the busy world. In the letter just referred to he speaks of ‘*my late being in England*’. He wishes his friend to accept ‘this simple pastoral’ ‘in part of payment of the infinite debt in which I acknowledge my selfe bounden unto you for your singular favours & sundrie good turns shewed to me at my late being in England’. This would have little force, if not written till December 1594, as Todd and others have urged, declaring 1591 to be a mere misprint. That *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* could have been written in no December later than that of 1591 is further proved by this fact: that when Spenser wrote it the image of Rosalind had not yet been superseded in his fancy; see the concluding lines of the poem. The old love still prevailed. Now it was in 1592 that a new love arose. It was in the course of that year that the Elizabeth, whom he married in 1594, conquered him with her charms;

see *Amoretti & Epithalamion*. Clearly then the dedicatory letter is accurate; *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* was written by the close of 1591. But it was slightly altered at the time of its publication in 1595. One of the 'shepherd's' commemorated in it had died in the interval. Ferdinando, Earl of Derby, the 'Amyntas' of the poem, died April 18, 1594 ('in the flower of his youth . . . not without suspicion of poyson,' says Dugdale, *Baronage of England*, ii. 250). The words are these, and they sufficiently indicate some alteration :

There also is (ah no, he is not now !)
 But since I said he is, he quite is gone,
 Amyntas quite is gone, and lies full low,
 Having his Amaryllis left to mone.
 Helpe, O ye Shepheards, helpe ye all in this,
 Helpe Amaryllis this her loss to mourne ;
 Her losse is yours, your losse Amyntas is,
 Amyntas, floure of Shepheards pride forlorne.
 He whilst he lived was the noblest swaine,
 That ever piped in an oaten quill ;
 Both did he other, which could pipe, maintaine,
 And eke could pipe himselfe with passing skill.

It may plausibly be conjectured that the original copy ran thus :

There also is Amyntas, noblest swaine,
 That ever piped in an oaten quill ;
 Both does he other, which can pipe, maintaine,
 And eke can pipe himselfe with passing skill.

"Nash had reproached Spenser with not having admitted this nobleman, then Lord Strange, into that honourable catalogue of our English Heroes which insueth the Conclusion of thy famous Faerie Queene' (see quotation from the *Pierce Pennilesse his Supplication, &c.*, apud Todd's Spenser, i. xci.), and in the revision of *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* Spenser made amends. Possibly other corrections were introduced, as in the case of Daniel; see Todd, i. xciii; but with regard to this point one must remember how commonly in the Elizabethan works circulated in manuscript years before they found their way into print.

"The only external objection to the date 1591 for the writing of *Colin Clout's Come Home Again*—and it is really trivial by the side of the arguments in favour of that date—is that *Daphnaida* is dated 'London this first of Januarie 1591.'—Either this is a misprint, to adopt Todd's method of solving such a difficulty, only applying it differently; or, as the late Prof. Craik suggested, Spenser here makes January the first month of the year 1591." This argument would require modification if Mr Edward Arber's view should turn out to be correct: viz. that Spenser's *Amyntas* was Thomas Watson. (English Reprints: *Thomas Watson's Poems*.

15 March, 1870, p. 16.) But Mr Hales's view is probably right.

Prof. Craik's suggestion is supported by Spenser's division of the year in his *Shepherds Calender*. After all, we need not inquire whether six days was not enough time for Spenser to have travelled from Kilcolman to London: for the *Daphnida* appears to be alluded to in *Colin Clout's Come Home Again*, so that the December of the latter should be after the January of the former work.

IX. *Willobie his Avis*, said to be a poem "in hexameter verse," because each verse contains six lines, was first published in 1594; and we have reprinted the commendatory poem and four *canti* from that edition. Other editions were in 1596, 1605, 1609, and 1635. From the Epistles found in these several editions we learn all we know of the presumptive author of this remarkable poem. A word on some of these first. To the edition of 1594 are prefixed an "Epistle Dedicatory" as well as an "Epistle to the Reader." Both are from Hadrian Dorrell, the reputed editor of the book and friend of its author. The latter he dates "from my chamber in Oxford, this first of October." To the edition of 1605 Dorrell adds an "apologie, shewing the true meaning of Willobie his Avis," which professes to answer some who misconstrued the poem, especially P. C. [Peter Colse], and ends with these remarkable words:—

"If any notwithstanding will continue the error of their vnsatisfied minds they must for ever rest in the[ir] rightlesse erring, till the author (now of late gone to God) returne from Heaven to satisfie them farder touching his meaning. And so farewell. Oxford this 30 of June 1596."

A poem called *The Victory of English Chastity* printed next to the *Apologie* is signed "Thomas Willoby Frater Henrici Willoby nuper defuncti" [n. d].¹ From these premises we should naturally conclude that there were two brothers, Henry and Thomas Willoby (Willobie, or Willoughby, the orthography being phonetic), both of whom were poets, and wrote on one and the same subject. The *Apologie* also records that Henry Willobie left "many other pretty things—of his devising," and a poem called *Susanna*, which must have been suggested by the story of *Susanna and the Elders*, and therefore we are asked to believe that both brothers wrote poems (*Avisa*, *Susanna*, and *The Victory of English Chastity*) on one subject—chastity, maidenly, or matronly; which, to say the least, is surprising. We also learn from the same premises that Henry Willobie died at Oxford between Oct. 1, 1594, and June

¹ Having been unable to see a copy of this edition, we are here trusting to the account of it in the *British Bibliographer*, vol. iii. p. 241. The edition of 1596 is only "presumed" in that work, nor has Mr Hazlitt "met with" it.

80, 1596, and that his brother survived him. One might almost guess already that Hadrian Dorrell is hoaxing us; that he was the Henry Willobie of the *Avisa* and *Susanna*, and after June, 1596, the Thomas Willobie of the *Victorie*. We shall soon find fresh suggestions of doubt.

In the editions of 1605 and 1635 are found the *Apology* and the *Epistle to the Reader*. In the former Dorrell says the author "fained an Individuum: * * to this fained Individuum, he gave this fained name *Avisa*;" and in the latter he writes

"I found this very name AVISA, written in great letters, a pretty distance a sunder, and under every letter, a word beginning with the same letter, in this forme,

A.	V.	I.	S.	A.
Amans	Vxor	Inuiolata	Semper	Amanda."

But Dorrell presently goes on to say,

"Yet of the other side, when I doe more deeply consider of it and more narrowly weigh every particular part, I am driven to thinke that there is something of truth hidden under this shadow. The reasons that move me are these. First in the same paper where I found the name of AVISA written in great letters, as I said before, I found this also written with the author's owne hand, viz. 'Yet I would not have *Avisa* to be thought a publike fiction, nor a truthlesse invention, for it may be, that I have at least heard of one in the west of England, in whom the substance of all this hath been verified, and in many things the verie words specified which hath endured these and many more, and many greater assaults, yet, as heere, she stands unspotted, and unconquered.'"

Who the lady was has never been determined, nor yet where she abode. We must not rush to the conclusion that her name was Susan, from the mention of *Avi-Susan* in the commendatory poem: for that has no more reference, of necessity, to the real lady's name than *Lucrece-Avis* (phonetic for *Lucrece-Avis*), the Susan being the Susanna of the Apocrypha, and the Lucrece being the Lucrece of Roman History; the former celebrated by H. W. (Henry Willobie), the latter by W. S. (William Shakspeare). *Avisa*, like the lady "in the west of England," abode

At Westerne side of Albion's isle
Where Austine pitcht his monkish tent,

which suggests Glastonbury; and her homestead is described in the single stanza which constitutes Canto XLVI. If one might make a guess at the lady's real name, from the hint given in that stanza, *St George* is at once suggested, and one is reminded of *Rich. III.* v. 3,

Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,
Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons!
Upon them! Victory sits upon our helms.

But there are two statements in Dorrell's *Apology* which are hard to reconcile. He writes:

"This poetical fiction was penned by the Author at least for thirtie and five yeeres since (as it will be proved), and lay in wast papers in his study, as many other prettie things did of his devising; and so might have continued still (as his Susanna yet doth) had not I, contrarie to his knowledge, with paine collected it and published it."

We know from the *British Bibliographer*, vol. iii. pp. 242, 258, that this passage is in the *Apology* (dated 1596) added to the edition of 1605. Now, 35 from 1596 leaves 1561, so that, according to Dorrell's statement, Henry Willobie had written his *Avisa* by June, 1561. The poem showing no sign of immaturity, we must conclude that he was nearly of age at that date; which will throw his birth back to about 1540. Taking that year as a basis of computation, he must have been from 53 to 56 at the time of his death. At least he was then a man of fifty, an elderly man, of whose achievements Dorrell might have written with praise, but of whom he could not have written as of a promising student and a young soldier: yet Dorrell describes him, in his epistle of Oct. 1594, as "a scholar of very good hope," and what is even more absurd, as a "young man, who, desirous of seeing the fashion of other countries, had not long sithence departed voluntarily in her Majesty's service," whereas he was in June, 1596, *nuper defunctus*, and had "not long sithence" departed at the bidding of the King of kings. Sir Egerton Brydges considered that this "anachronism [might] be ascribed to inadvertency." For ourselves, we see in it the *pes clauda* which so persistently dogs the hoaxer; and we are led to the conclusion, already mentioned, that *Willobie his Avisa* is of the same class as *The Legacy of an Etonian*, Edited by Robert Nolands, sole executor (Macmillan, 1846), where the executor's name is a pseudonym, and the editor was sole author of the poems, which are there attributed to "a young friend, Mr E——n." Here, *nostro judicio*, we have the key to the Willobie-Dorrell mystery. Otherwise, we should be driven to the conclusion that this poem, which is redolent of late Elizabethan associations, belongs (by a miraculous anachronism) to the reign of Henry VIII., and that therefore the interlocutor whose initials are W. S. could not be William Shakspeare, seeing he was not born till the third year after the poem was written.

On the other hand, the name of Willobie is found in a marginal note in William Clarke's *Polimanteia*, 1595, where he is referred to as one of those of Oxford who "are able to sing sweetly when it please thee." Clarke makes "England to her three daughters," the Universities, say,

Sweet Ma-
ster Champion.

Britton.
Percie.
Willobie.
Fraunce.
Lodge.
Master Da-
nis of L. I.
Drayton.
Learned M.
Piat.

"I know, *Cambridge*, howsoever now old, thou hast some young, bid them be chaste, yet suffer them to be wittie; let them be soundly learned, yet suffer them to be gentlemanlike qualified: *Oxford* thou hast many, and they are able to sing sweetly when it please thee. And thou youngest of all three, either in Hexameter English, thou art curious (but that thou learnedst of my daughter *Cambridge*) or in any other kinde thou art so wisely merrie, as myselfe (though olde) am often delighted with thy musick, tune thy sweet strings, & sing what please thee." [sign. Q3, back.]

But this does not clear up the difficulty, as Clarke may have only known Willobie's name from the book.

The commendatory poem (called an *Hexameton*) contains the earliest printed mention of Shakspeare that has yet been discovered. Its date is at least as early as the first edition of *Willobie his Avis*, viz. 1594; i. e. one year earlier than that of Clarke's *Polimanteia*, in a marginal note to which the name of Shakspeare also occurs. The second verse of this *Hexameton*, in which Shakspeare is named as the author of *Lucrece*, was quoted by Mr J. P. Collier in his Introduction to that poem (Ed. of Shakespeare, 1858, vol. vi. p. 526). He here also refers to the *Canti* of the *Avisa*, which we have reprinted at large, in his *Life of Shakespeare* (Ibid. vol. i. p. 115). The dialogue between H. W. and W. S. was first reprinted in Ellis' *Specimens*, vol. ii. p. 378, and subsequently at greater length by Sir Walter C. Trevelyan, in *Notes and Queries*, 2nd S. ix. 59-60, under date Jan. 28, 1860.

The *Hexameton* is signed *Contraria Contrariis: Vigilantius: Dormitanus*, under which fanciful signature some have supposed to lurk the real name of the writer: but all that it appears to mean is that, if we designate contraries by contraries, the author is *Wide-awake Sleepy-head*: which might possibly contain a pun on his name.

X.—XVII. Sir Wm Harbert's *Epicidium* and the stanza from Michael Drayton's *Matilda* are supposed to allude to Shakspeare's *Rape of Lucrece*, which was first printed in 1594. Some doubt as to the latter allusion is raised by the expression

Acting her passions on our stately stage.

Undoubtedly that line means what it says; for in another poem of Drayton's, *Mistress Shore to Edward V.*, we have the same expression applied to Tragedy,

Or passionate Tragedian in his rage
Acting a Love-sick passion on the stage.

But we know of but one play on the subject of *Lucrece*,

Thomas Heywood's *Rape of Lucrece*; and that was not printed till 1608; and we do not know of its having been performed before that year; and having regard to the recent publication of Shakspeare's poem, we should naturally refer Drayton's allusion to that piece. The verse we have reprinted is found in two editions of *Matilda*, viz. those of 1594 and 1596. A copy of the former is at Sion College, and of the latter in the British Museum. In subsequent editions that verse is not found. Can it be that Drayton was originally under the impression that Shakspeare's poem was a play; and on finding out his mistake expunged the allusion? Who shall say?

We have reprinted nearly two pages of "a letter from England to her three daughters," appended to *Polimanteia*, 1595, for the sake of some most curious and enigmatical *marginalia* or side-notes, where occurs what is for us the "captain-jewel of the carkanet"—"Lucrecia sweet Shakspeare;" in which we see a recommendation of Shakspeare's second heir, *Lucrece*, so called on the title-page of the first edition, 1594. This is the second mention of Shakspeare; and in both *Avisa* and *Polimanteia* his name is associated with his *Rape of Lucrece*. We may note, too, the epithet "sweet," which must be taken in corroboration of the fact, to which we have already adverted, that Shakspeare was, *par excellence*, designated *mellifluous* and *honey-tongued*, and his muse proverbially compared to honey, sugar, and nectar. In this we recognize a conventional compliment of the day; but also to some extent an accurate estimate of Shakspeare's poetry; for his versification was so melodious, and his subject and treatment so sensuous, that with young and susceptible readers his poems were "the best books in the world." (See Machin's *Dumb Knight*.)

Most of the text of our extract relates to Samuel Daniel, whose tragedy of *Cleopatra* (and "well graced *Anthonie*"), *Complaint of Rosamond*, and LVII. Sonnets (with *Ode* and *Pastorall To Delia*), are here praised. The divine Lady is Daniel's patroness, Mary, Countess of Pembroke.

Below "sweet Shakspeare" is "Eloquent Gaveston," which is certainly an allusion to Michael Drayton, who wrote *Piers Gaveston*: and between this and the allusion of Daniel's *Cleopatra* (or else to the prefixed Letter from Octavia to Anthony) are the enigmatical words "Wanton Adonis. Watson's heyre." These have been variously explained. Some have read the two expressions together, and identifying "Wanton Adonis" with the "first heir" of Shakspeare's invention, have declared him to be "Watson's heyre" or literary successor. This would appear to be Mr Edward Arber's view (*English Reprints: Thomas Watson's*

Poems, 15 March, 1870, p. 16), but he unintentionally gives a point to the allusion which the original work does not countenance, by printing "Wanton Adonis. Watson's heyre," by itself, on the opposite margin of the extract from *Polimanteia*; it is so, indeed, in the original; but only because it is on the next page, all the notes being on the outside margin of the text. If the division of the pages be disregarded, the four words in question should be placed on the same margin as the preceding notes. Mr C. Elliot Browne argues for the same conclusion (*Notes and Queries*, 4th S. xi. 378, May 10, 1873); and regarding the heirship of Shakspeare to concern the *Sonnets* mainly or solely, sees in that fact (if fact it be) "some ground for inferring that he [Shakspeare] had acquired a reputation for his sonnets, three years before the notice by Meres in 1598." But this is mere circular reasoning: for we must first know the fact of that reputation before we can infer the desired heirship from the note in *Polimanteia*: since it is highly probable that W. C. would not have given Shakspeare such a name as "Watson's heyre" (q. d. in sonnet-writing) unless Shakspeare had already been publicly recognized as Watson's chief rival in that art.

Others have seen in the same four words an allusion to some posthumous poetical work of Watson's, which at that time would be recognized under the name of "Wanton Adonis," and evidently the date of Watson's death favours that hypothesis, for there would be from two to three years for such a work to be printed and published; so that it might be just exciting notice at the time W. C. wrote his *Polimanteia*. Another view has occurred to ourselves; viz. that as Watson was nicknamed "the English Petrarch," and W. C. himself calls Spenser "thy Petrarch," i. e. the Petrarch of Cambridge, he may have regarded Spenser (who survived Watson) as "Watson's heyre." It is true he has already named Spenser in the margin: but he names Drayton in the margin, and afterwards praises his *Gaveston*. On this view, however, "Wanton Adonis" presents some difficulty: for if the "sweet and chaste" poem of *Venus and Adonis*, in which Venus is the wanton and assailing party and Adonis the coy and unconquerable youth, could be called by that singularly inappropriate name, W. C. would surely have mentioned it with "Lucrecia," and not have inserted "Eloquent Gaveston" between Shakspeare's two poems.

Another view is that "Watson's heyre" is Henry Constable; and Dr Brinsley Nicholson has with some ingenuity supported this as the more probable conjecture (*Notes and Queries*, 4th S. xi. 491, June 14, 1873), but his argument does not carry conviction

to our mind. Others think the "heyre" was Abraham Fraunce. Our impression is, that the full points in these *marginalia* were intended to mark a complete separation of names; and therefore that "Wanton Adonis" (poem or author) is not to be identified with "Watson's heyre." At present there is not sufficient evidence before us to interpret satisfactorily those enigmatical terms. The *marginalia* are just such notes as the author might have written on the margins of his manuscript, as suggestions for perfecting the "Letter;" and these, by reason of his absence or death, might have been printed as integral parts of his work. It is always exceedingly difficult to identify these loose allusions of an Elizabethan author to a contemporary writer, especially if they are complimentary: for either the compliment is too weak a generality, or it contains an estimate of literary merit which is utterly discrepant with the verdict of posterity. This fact is brought home to us with great force when we see how *inappropriate*, as well as *inadequate*, was the praise bestowed on Shakspeare by his contemporaries: and to this day we are unable to identify the rising wit, whose exceeding great promise, as that of a splendid sun-rising, is celebrated by John Davies of Hereford in his *Paper's Complaint*.

Of the other small pieces here reprinted, the little that was to be said, is said in the brief notes appended to them respectively.

We will only add that the allusions in Marston's *Scourge of Villanie* are the earliest distinct allusions to any of Shakspeare's plays. Those of Greene, Chettle, and Harvey, and that of Spenser (if it be an allusion to Shakspeare, which is certainly somewhat doubtful) do severally contain a side glance at his Histories: the writers of our other excerpts know him, for the most part, as an amatory poet. In Marston we meet with a distinct recognition of his popularity as a playwright. From this time forward till Shakspeare's death (as we shall see in the Second Part of our *Allusion-Books*) his contemporaries notice his plays much more frequently than his poems, and utterly ignore his Sonnets.

The lines parodied by Marston in the first extract from *The Scourge of Villanie* are in *Romeo and Juliet*; where Capulet cries,

A hall! a hall! give room and foot it girls.
More light, ye knaves.

The "worthy poet" was Sir John Davies, the gifted author of *Orchestra, or a Poeme on Dauncing*, 1596. Kemp's jig (like Tarleton's jig, already mentioned) was one of those diversions of

combined singing and dancing, which was invented and performed by him. (See Dyce's Introduction to Kemp's *Nine days Wonder*, p. xx., and Collier's *Memoirs of Actors*, pp. 100-102.)

The Committee desire me to express their thanks to Mr Henry Huth for his great kindness in lending them his very rare originals of the first three of these '*Allusion-Books*' to reprint. I have also to record my thanks to Miss L. Toulmin Smith for her aid in the revision of my proofs.

C. M. I.

Valentines, Ilford, September, 1874.

A FEW NOTES AND CORRECTIONS

TO

GABRIEL HARVEY'S THIRD LETTER.

Page	Line	
125	34	"the olde Fox" is Dr Perne, who is mentioned on p. 5. Nash alludes to him more than once. See his <i>Strange Newes or Four Letters Coupled</i> (Sig. F 4. verso), where we find in italics, "the olde Foxe Doctour Perne".
129	1	"than". It is "then" in the old copy.
	20	"we" is an error of the old copy for "with".
130	22, 23	"him or them": i. e. Robert Greene or the brothers Harvey.
	24	"their lives": i. e. the lives of the brothers.
	25	"he that liued not" is John Harvey.
131	20	"The second Toy of London": Toy was the name of a contemporary stage clown. (See Dodsley's <i>Old Plays</i> , ed. Collier, 1825, vol. 9, p. 50, note.)
	30	"a Player" means a gamester or gambler—not an actor or a playwright.
133	17	"be like" (<i>sic</i> in the old copy) is "belike".
	24, 25	"and how many millions of greene youthes, haue in ouer-mounting, most ruefully dismounted": a parallel to a well-known crux in <i>Macbeth</i> .
134	4, 5	"his inwardest companion, that tasted of the fatal herring": an allusion to Robert Greene's death. (See our reprint from <i>Meres' Wits Treasury</i> , p. 164, ll. 29, 30.)
	34, 35	" <i>Fauste precor gelida</i> ". This is also given to Holofernes in <i>Loves Labours Lost</i> , IV. iii. 95. It is quoted, says Dyce, from the beginning of the First Eclogue of Mantuanus: i. e. Baptista Spagnolo.
136	11	<i>Nocta</i> is our error for <i>Nocte</i> .
137	17	Harvey has "bostesse", an evident error for "hostesse".
139	24	"haunted" (<i>sic</i> in the old copy) should be "hunted".
143	17	"mouths". The old copy has "mouth".
144	24	The "verse" is probably Gabriel Harvey's.
	26	The "Sonnet" is probably that printed by Harvey at the end of his <i>Four Letters and Certaine Sonnets</i> .
148	4	May not "Gnomes" be an error for "Tomes", a word elsewhere used by Harvey?
	9, 10	The mention of Thomas Watson proves that he was alive at the date of the letter; and we know that he died before the end of the year.
149	7	"Dammeo" is the word of the old copy. It is probably an error for "Dammes", i. e. "Dama."

SUPPLEMENT

- I. GREENE ON NASH. II. CHETTLE ON SHAKSPERE.
 III. MARLOWE, GREENE, AND SHAKSPERE.

BY RICHARD SIMPSON, ESQ., B.A.

(Reprinted from THE ACADEMY, April 11, 1874, p. 400.)

MR HOWARD STAUNTON, in a recent letter to the *Athenæum*, tries to show that a passage in the Epistle prefixed to Chettle's *Kind Heart's Dream*, 1592, which has been always considered to refer to Shakspeare, does not so refer; and, incidentally, that the three playwrights to whom Greene addressed his epistle, appended to his *Groatsworth of Wit*, are not Marlowe, Lodge, and Peele, but Marlowe, Nash, and Peele. On the former point I differ from Mr Staunton, on the latter I agree with him. Perhaps it is worth while to discuss the two points, as Chettle's and Greene's two pamphlets are to be among the first publications of the New Shakspeare Society.

I.—First, with regard to the question whether the "Young Juvenal" of Greene's letter was Lodge or Nash—Dr Farmer first said it was Nash, but Malone denied it on two grounds; that we know that Greene and Lodge wrote a comedy together, *The Looking-glass for London*, but we know of no comedy written by Greene and Nash; and that Nash was pointed at as the real author of Greene's posthumous letter, which would not be natural if he was one of those to whom it was addressed. Therefore, Malone concluded "Young Juvenal" was Lodge and not Nash. And Shaksperian scholars have generally followed Malone's lead, till Mr Howard Staunton.

But "Young Juvenal" cannot be Lodge. The chief point which Greene dwells upon is the age of the man he addresses. He is "young," and "boy." Now Lodge was three years older than Greene. In 1592 Lodge was 35 and Greene was 32, neither of them "boys." Lodge was born probably in 1557; he was B.A. July 8, 1577. In 1592 he was a weather-beaten sailor. Greene was born in 1560, and became B.A. at an earlier age in 1578.

Again, Lodge was absent from England at the date of Greene's letter. He sailed in Cavendish's second expedition; the ships left Plymouth Aug. 26, 1591, reached Brazil Dec. 15, and re-

mained at Santos till Jan. 22, 1592, when they sailed for the Straits of Magellan: on Sept. 13, 1592 the South Sea was sighted, but the ships were driven back into the straits. October 2 they fetched the South Sea again, where they were cruelly buffeted, but recovered the straits a third time. February 6, 1593, they were at Placentia. One of the ships, without victuals, sails, and almost without men, came to land, at Bearhaven in Ireland, June 11, 1593. It is not to be supposed that the absent Lodge was one of those to whom Greene addressed his letter, as if they were all present in London at the time.

Again, it is generally thought that Lodge had forsworn writing for the theatre in 1589. The last stanza of his *Scyllae Metamorphosis* of that date contains the lines:—

. . . "And then by oath he [Glaucus] bound me
To write no more of that whence shame doth grow,
Or tie my pen to Pennie Knaves delight,
But live with fame, and so for fame to write."

If he kept this vow, it is clear that his two plays must be dated before 1589. And *The Looking-glass for London*, in which Greene was parcel author with him, seems to have been written early in 1589, for Greene in the dedication of his *Mourning Garment* (1589) to the Earl of Cumberland has some allusions to the matter of the play, as if it was then fresh in his memory. Thus Lodge and Greene had written a comedy together early in 1589. Is this any proof that Lodge must have been the person whom Greene, three and a half years later, addressed as having "lastly with me together writ[ten] a comedy"? Lastly means "quite lately." It would be absurd to torture the meaning of the word to prop up so weak a conclusion as this, that Lodge must have been the man, because a comedy written by Lodge and Greene nearly four years before happens to have survived, whereas in the general shipwreck of Greene's dramatic works no comedy avowedly written by him with any one else has been preserved.

Again, Lodge could not with propriety be called a Juvenal in 1592. *A Fig for Momus*, his only satirical work, was not published till 1595. And when he there states that the present instalment was only a trial, and that he had in his hands a whole centon more Satires, which should suddenly be published if those passed, he implies that those then printed were the only ones that had seen the light, or had been submitted to men's judgment. But the satirist whom Greene mentions had already "vexed scholars with his sharp and bitter lines," and they had "reproved his too much liberty of speech." "Young Juvenal" had attacked individuals, and Greene advises him to do so no more. Lodge had

never done so. Even after 1595 Lodge was never called "Juvenal." His Satires fell flat, and the world never asked him to publish the store which he had in reserve, or to print a new edition of those he had given forth. Two years after *A Fig for Momus*, Hall published the first three books of his Satires, and in his prologue, oblivious of Lodge, claimed to be the first writer of this kind:

"I first adventure, follow me who list,
And be the second English satirist."

In the controversy about priority between Hall and Marston, no one ever thought of pleading Lodge's indubitable first claim. Perhaps the title of Juvenal, except in irony, would have been the last to be conceded by his contemporaries to this sweet pastoral poet, indifferent satirist, and still less commendable playwright.

Young Juvenal then is not Lodge. Is he Nash?

Nash's age and appearance fit well. He was born in November, 1567. He was 7 years younger than Greene, and wanted some two months of 25 years when Greene's letter was written. He was a beardless youth, with a shaggy head of hair, if we may credit his portrait¹ in *The Trimming of Thomas Nash*, where however his open mouth and "lips ugly wrested" might, on a too slight inspection, be mistaken for a hungry beard.

Nash also was a "biting satirist," who since 1589 had been sowing his pasquinades broad-cast, and had already "vexed scholars with his sharp and bitter lines." He had begun writing as Greene's coadjutor, with a preface to *Menaphon*, in which whole classes of the writers of the time were treated with much disdain. The attack was followed up the same year in his *Anatomy of Absurdity*. The Puritans, their favourers, and all who wished to give them a fair hearing, were attacked with wit, malice, buffoonery, and venom in *The Countercuffe*, 1589, *The Return of the Renowned Cavaliero*, *Pasquil of England*, 1589, *Martin's Month's Mind*, 1589, *Pasquil's Apology*, 1590, *An Almond for a Parrott*, 1590. The personal war with the Harveys was already begun in the *Wonderful Strange Astrological Prognostication*, 1591. *Pierce Penniless*, 1592, is subsequent to Greene's death, for Nash tells us that he had intended to print an epistle "to the ghost of Robert Greene" in the first edition of it, had not the fear of infection detained him with his Lord (Whitgift) in the country (at Croydon). Here was abundant material for calling Nash

¹ He is also spoken of as beardless in Harvey's text: and in it (further back, I think) there are two satirical lines on his want and its cause.—B. Nicholson.

"Young Juvenal." He had already christened himself the Pasquil of England; and "Juvenal," if I remember rightly, was the name given him by Meres in 1598.

It remains to show that Nash and Greene had probably written a comedy together shortly before September, 1592. That Greene joined Nash, Lily, and perhaps Kempe in writing the Anti-Martinist plays and pamphlets we have this evidence, among much more to the same purpose. Nash, in his *Strange News*, 1592, explains why Greene attacked the Harvey family in his *Quip for an Upstart Courtier*. He says that Richard Harvey, in his *Percival the Peacemaker*, took upon him to play "jack of both sides twixt Martin and us," and snarled at Lily and Nash himself; and afterwards in his *Lamb of God* reviled Nash and Lily, and "mistermed all our other poets and writers about town 'piperly make-plays and make-bates.'" Then, Greene, "being chief agent for the company," canvassed Harvey and his brothers in the work mentioned above. This shows that Greene was one of those who wrote the plays and pasquinades against Martin, and that they were a company, and wrote in common. Hence it is more than probable that Greene and Nash together wrote one or more of those multitudinous comedies, referred to by Lily in *Pap with a Hatchet*, and Nash in his *Martin's Month's Mind*, and *Pasquil's Return*, some of which only were acted, and those so violent that the children of Paul's were inhibited from acting before October, 1589, and a strict censorship set up over all other companies of actors a month later. But the company's business was not over with this inhibition; nor did the controversy with the Puritans altogether forsake the stage. In 1592 we find it still going on. Early in that year, Lord Strange's company brought out a new play, or rather an old one re-written, *A Knack to know a Knave*, a "moral" similar to Greene and Nash's *Looking-glass*, consisting of an historical over-plot—in which Edgar stands for Queen Elizabeth, and Dunstan for Whitgift, where Dunstan is treated much as Bacon is treated in Greene's *Friar Bacon*,—and a satirical underplot, in which the puritanical clerical knave comes in for the chief lashing. A careful perusal will show many scenes written by a euphuistic poet like Greene, and many others, pervaded with the gibing spirit of Nash. I should be loth to affirm that this is the comedy actually referred to by Greene in his letter to the play-writers, but it seems to me to be much more likely to be the play "lastly" written by him and "Young Juvenal" together, than the *Looking-glass for London* is; because for other reasons Lodge, the joint-author of the latter play, cannot be the "Young Juvenal" of the letter.

There is only one other point to notice ; it is Malone's argument, that because some contemporaries supposed the letter to be Nash's and not Greene's, therefore Nash could not be one of the persons to whom it was addressed. But surely these readers may have been either careless readers who had failed to notice the two short sentences in which Nash is described, or wary readers who thought that Nash, when he wrote in Greene's name, not impolitely addressed the letter to himself, in order to put guessers off the true scent, and to suggest to them the very same false argument which took in so good a critic as Malone.

Mr Staunton says that he has "evidence" that Nash and not Lodge is the person intended. If he has any new facts bearing on the point, "I take it there is but two ways, either to utter them or to conceal them." For myself, what I have adduced convinces me that Lodge certainly was not, and Nash almost certainly was, the person addressed by Greene as "Young Juvenal."

II.—The second point is, whether Chettle refers to Shakspeare in the apology for the *Groatsworth of Wit*. In the Epistle to the Gentlemen readers prefixed to *Kind Heart's Dream*, Chettle says,

"About three months since died M. Robert Greene, leaving many papers in sundry booksellers' hands ; among other, his *Groatsworth of Wit*, in which a letter written to divers playmakers is offensively by one or two of them taken ; and because on the dead they cannot be avenged, they wilfully forge in their conceits a living author ; and after tossing it to and fro, no remedy but it must light on me. . . . With neither of them that take offence was I acquainted, and with one of them I care not if I never be : the other whom at that time I did not so much spare as since I wish I had. . . . I am as sorry as if the original fault had been my fault, because myself have seen his demeanour no less civil than he excellent in the quality he professes : besides, divers of worship have reported his uprightness of dealing which argues his honesty, and his facetious grace in writing that approves his art."

Mr Staunton bows to the general consent which identifies the first of these two with Marlowe, but not to the equal unanimity which identifies the other with Shakspeare. For, he remarks, Chettle expressly says that Greene's letter was written to divers playmakers and by one or two of them offensively taken. Now the letter was not written to Shakspeare, but against him.

This is true, and if Chettle wrote with unerring accuracy and with classical refinement he would not have confounded the "ad" and "in." As the epigrammatist says :—

In libris tria verba meis celebrantur ; ad, in, de :
De docet ; Ad dignos laudat ; et In lacerat.

Greene wrote *ad*, to Marlowe, "Young Juvenal", and Peele, and *in*, against Shakspeare. Chettle, if he had been writing with the forethought and care with which a lawyer makes a will, should

have said that Greene's letter was to divers playmakers and against another. But in common and less fastidious speech the first phrase "to divers" would comprehend the second, and would point out all the persons aimed at in the letter. A Frenchman would say that the letter was directed to Shakspeare as much as to the others: "*Ce trait malin est allé à son adresse.*" The argument, therefore, which builds so much on Chettle's use of the word "to" is entirely unsafe. The assumption of such a prudish precision in him is a precarious hypothesis.

The application of Chettle's words to Shakspeare should be rather tested by facts, than by grammatical niceties. First, we may examine it thus. Greene addresses (so to say) four persons, and says something characteristic of all four. Two of them take offence, and Chettle apologises; the apology ought naturally to fit the offensive remarks. We may see for whom the apology is meant, by finding out to whom Greene addressed the insults which it retracts.

The four objects of Greene were: 1. Marlowe; 2. "Young Juvenal" (either Lodge or Nash); 3. Peele; 4. Shakspeare. The first three he extols, but with some mixture of blame. Marlowe, though the famous gracer of tragedians, had said in his heart there is no God; had an excellent wit, but gave no glory to the Giver; studied Machiavelli, and was a disciple of his political liberty.

"Young Juvenal" was a biting satirist, who made enemies by bitter words addressed to persons not to characters, and who "had vexed scholars with bitter lines," and had in turn been reproved for his too much liberty of speech.

Peele was no less deserving than the other two, in some things rarer, in nothing inferior. He had but one fault, he wrote for the common players, and thereby was worthy of the extreme shifts to which he was driven.

All these three in common were also warned against profane oaths, drunkenness, lust, and epicurean flatterers.

Shakspeare is described as an upstart crow "beautified with our feathers" (by which I believe Greene meant simply an actor who had assumed the part of an author, but which Chettle and others understood as implying a charge of dishonest appropriation of other men's compositions), "a tiger's heart wrapped in a player's hide" (a ferocious ruffian)—one who supposed himself as well able to bombast out a blank verse as Marlowe himself; an absolute Johannes factotum; in his own conceit the only Shakespeare in a country; and one who, by favour of his fellows the players, those apes, rude grooms, buckram gentlemen, peasants,

and despicable painted monsters, had already supplanted Greene in his calling of playwright, and would soon supplant Marlowe, Peele, and "Young Juvenal" also, unless they were beforehand with him, and forsook the trade.

Chettle's apology is made to two of these four persons. To Marlowe he can say no more than this: that he does not desire his acquaintance; that he reverences his learning; that he hopes he will use him no worse than he deserves; and that he did greatly mitigate Greene's charges against him. To the other he apologises by bearing witness to his "civil demeanour," his "excellence in the quality he professes," his "honesty and uprightness of dealing," his "facetious grace in writing," and his "art." These are exactly the points which Greene had assailed in Shakspeare, but had not touched in the cases of "Young Juvenal" and Peele. If Chettle, therefore, dealt out his retraction with any view whatever to the imputations he was retracting, he must have meant Shakspeare, and neither of the others.

Again, if this apology was not addressed to Shakspeare, it must have been meant either for Peele, or Lodge, or Nash. No one has ever suggested that Peele took offence; nor indeed had he reason to be offended. It could not have been Lodge, because Chettle within three months of Greene's death, September 3, 1592, had become acquainted with the man, had witnessed his civil demeanour and his excellent carriage in his profession. But at Christmas, 1592, Lodge was in the Straits of Magellan. Mr Staunton thinks that it was Nash; but there are several reasons against this. First, Chettle says that the two who took offence, because they could not be revenged on a dead man, wilfully forged a living author; and having tossed it to and fro, having thrown suspicion first on one, then another, at last they fixed on Chettle. In reply to this, he ends his apology by protesting that "it was all Greene's, not mine, nor Master Nash's, as some unjustly have affirmed." This clearly means that the two who took offence in tossing the imputed authorship to and fro, had first fixed on Nash, and then on Chettle. Nash, then, cannot have been one of those two.

But though he was not one of these two offended persons, Nash did take offence at Greene's posthumous pamphlet, or rather, perhaps, at the report that it was his. "Other news I am advertised of," he writes in an Epistle prefixed to the second edition of *Pierce Penniless*, "that a scald, trivial, lying pamphlet called *Greene's Groatworth of Wit* is given out to be of my doing. God never have care of my soul, but utterly renounce me, if the least word or syllable in it proceeded from my pen, or if I were

in any way privy to the writing or printing of it." He was evidently sore that Marlowe and the other [Shakspere] should have attributed the pamphlet to him, and in his vexation he called it "scald, trivial, lying." "Possibly," observes Mr Collier, "one of the lying portions of it, in the opinion of Nash, was that in which an attack was made upon Shakspere." Dyce is surprised at this remark, because Nash was in the same fellowship of playwrights, and must have shared Greene's jealousy and fear of Shakspere. But, he adds, Nash's offence at the pamphlet resulted from his view "of the probable consequences of such a publication to himself: he was vexed and irritated because its disclosures concerning men with whom he was well known to have associated—the dead Greene and the still-living Marlowe—had a strong tendency to injure his own character; and he boldly pronounced it to be a 'lying pamphlet,' in the hope of shaking its credit with the world." Dyce's observation gains much force from the fact, unknown to him, that at this time, in the autumn of 1592, Nash was the guest of Archbishop Whitgift at Croydon, whither the household had retired for fear of the plague, and that as the official antagonist of Martin Marprelate, he had to keep up such a character as would not disgrace his clerical employers.

A second reason why this "other," to whom Chettle apologises, cannot be Nash, is this. The person was evidently an anonymous writer, none of whose compositions had as yet been published; so Chettle, instead of referring to his books as showing his skill, only brings forward the witness of sundry gentlemen who "reported his facetious grace in writing." Now Nash, as I have shown, had already published a whole series of works. Shakspere had published nothing, and his authorship of his plays was only known within a very narrow circle.

A third reason is, that Chettle had seen this man's "excellence in the quality he professed." The man professed some calling which obliged him to make a personal exhibition of himself—such as preaching, pleading, or acting. Shakspere was an actor. I never heard that Nash was either actor, advocate, or preacher.

A fourth is this; Chettle, at the time of the publication of Greene's letter, was not acquainted with either of the two to whom he afterwards apologised. But he seems to have been acquainted with Nash. Greene reproves Nash for vexing scholars with bitter lines. Chettle in his apology protests that he has, all the time of his conversing with printing, hindered the bitter inveighing against scholars; and in 1596 he signs himself, in a letter to Nash, "your old compositor." It seems as if Chettle had set up some of Nash's satirical works, and had induced him

to mitigate their gall. The very title page of *Kind Heart's Dream* bears witness to the familiarity between Chettle and Piers Penniless or Nash.

In the fifth place, the gentlemen who reported to Chettle on the honesty and art of the "other," are much more likely to have been the patrons of the stage where Shakspeare acted, or the private friends among whom his Sonnets circulated, than the reverend circle of Archbishop Whitgift's family at Croydon, among whom Nash's patrons were then to be sought.

I do not claim very great weight for these last four arguments taken separately; but their converging conclusions go to reinforce the peremptory conclusion of the first argument, that the "other" (besides Marlowe) to whom Chettle apologised, was not Nash, but Shakspeare.

No doubt Mr Staunton has started a difficulty which deserved investigation, but investigation dissolves the mist which he has raised; and he has not established the faintest pretence for asking the New Shakspeare Society to refrain from publishing Chettle's *Kind Heart's Dream* as a book containing a manifest and indubitable allusion to Shakspeare.

III. MARLOWE, GREENE, AND SHAKSPERE.

FROM the passage above it appears that Marlowe and Shakspeare, having been insulted in common by the publication, took prevailing action against it. Chettle says of them, that "because on the dead they could not be avenged, they wilfully forged in their conceits a living author; and after tossing it to and fro, no remedy but it must light on me." In this "tossing to and fro" it appears that at one time they fixed upon Nash as the author; he therefore protests that "it was all Greene's, not mine, nor Master Nash's, as some unjustly have affirmed."

Shakspeare and Marlowe thus acting together, and fixing upon Nash as their common enemy, is somewhat inconsistent with the prevailing idea which classes together Marlowe, Greene, Peele, Lodge, and Nash, as the confraternity of University wits, more or less in hostility to the interloper Shakspeare. The idea is founded on this letter of Greene's, which has been accepted without making allowances for the ingrained falsehood of the man. Greene gives us to understand that he and Marlowe were great friends; yet in addressing Marlowe he makes against him the vilest insinuations; and those which we can now read are little in comparison with those which the manuscript, probably, contained.

At the perusing of Greene's book, says Chettle, I "stroke out what then in conscience I thought he in some displeasure writ [concerning Marlowe], or, had it beene true, yet to publish it was intolerable."

Greene had alluded to Marlowe in previous writings, but always in the same spirit. In the Epistle prefixed to his *Perimedes* (1588) he tells how a play of his had been scorned "for that I could not make my verses jet upon the stage in tragical buskins, every word filling the mouth like the fa-burden of Bowbell, daring God out of heaven with that atheist Tamburlaine, or blaspheming with the mad priest of the sun." Marlowe, we know by Harvey's sonnets, was known by the name of Tamburlaine, just as Shakspeare was called by the name of his most popular character, and was written of by the Countess of Southampton, and by Sir Edwin Sandys, as Sir John Falstaff.¹

Again, in his *Farewell to Folly*, 1591, Greene tells his University readers that his *Mourning Garment* had so ready a sale that the pedlar "found them too dear for his pack, and was fain to bargain for the life of Tamburlaine to wrap up his sweet powders in those unsavoury papers." And when he employed Nash, then just returned from a three years' absence, to criticize his contemporaries in the Epistle prefixed to *Menaphon* in 1589, he made Nash cite, not Marlowe, to whom common consent gave the palm, but Peele, as "the chief supporter of pleasaunce now living, the Atlas of poetry, and *primus verborum artifex*" with a "pregnant dexterity of wit and manifold variety of invention, wherein (*me judice*) he goeth a step beyond all that write."

The impression, then, that Greene seems to wish to make, that he had been an intimate friend and comrade of Marlowe, appears to be untrue. On the contrary, in the heyday of Marlowe's success in 1588-91, Greene was as jealous of him as he was of Shakspeare in 1592, and for a similar reason.

On the other hand, I know of no evidence, beyond Greene's malicious insinuation, of any unfriendly rivalry between Shakspeare and Marlowe. Marlowe, I believe, is one of the two contemporary poets to whom Shakspeare directly refers in any of his plays, and then his allusion is anything but unfriendly:—

Dead Shepherd, now I find thy saw of might,
'He never loved that loved not at first sight.'

¹ See Historical MSS. Commission, 3rd Report, p. 148, and Sir Edwin Sandys letters—a volume published in the middle of the 17th century; I have mislaid the reference. Of course I assume Marlowe to be the author of Tamburlaine; the indirect evidence is abundant; the chief direct evidence hitherto relied on has been proved to be a forgery.

That there was a rivalry may be surmised from this; that in 1593 they were both occupied in writing amatory poems; Shakspeare with his *Venus and Adonis*, Marlowe with his *Hero and Leander*. If this rivalry was friendly, whatever there may be in common between Marlowe and Shakspeare in the 3 parts of *Henry VI.* is not to be imputed, on Greene's word, to dishonest pilfering on the part of Shakspeare—a charge from which Chettle's apology ought to bear him free,—but rather to the co-operation not unusual among dramatists. Dyce has pointed out some verbal parallelisms of Marlowe's *Edward II.* with the 1st part of the *Contention*, and the *True Tragedy*. The very structure of *Edward II.* seems to bear witness to the counsel and aid of Shakspeare, just as the construction of Ben Jonson's *Sejanus*, as compared with his *Catiline*, may bear witness to the co-operation of some "second pen" whose contributions Ben erased, preferring "to put weaker, and no doubt less pleasing, of mine own, than to defraud so happy a genius of his right by my loathed usurpation." A play brought out by the same company (that of Lord Pembroke), and about the same time with *Edward II.*, is *The taming of a Shrew*. Marlowe's share in this only fails of proof through the abundance of internal evidence. There are whole passages of three and four lines each verbally transcribed from Marlowe's plays. That an author should so closely repeat himself is unusual; but that any one should so openly plagiarize from the works of a living or recently deceased writer universally known, and where detection would be certain, is next to incredible, except perhaps on the hypothesis that Shakspeare might have written the comedy, with its Marlowesque turgidity in the more serious parts, in order to show what manner of writer he would be, if, as had been said of him, he was a mere plagiarist from Marlowe; just as he seems to have published *Loocrine* in 1595 (it was entered in the Stationers' books, July 20, 1594) "newly set forth, overseene and corrected by W. S.,"—an old play, written, according to Sir George Buck, by Charles Tylney, who was executed for treason in Sept. 1586,—with interpolations from Peele (pointed out by Dyce), and imitations from Greene, and perhaps from Marlowe. Either, it seems to me, we must accept the hypothesis that these two plays are an ironical answer to Greene's charges, showing the difference of the new school of Comedy and Tragedy from the old, which the author was accused of plagiarizing from; or else, if we think, as most of us do think, that Shakspeare must have had a hand in the old *Taming of a Shrew*, we must assign to him as a partner in writing it, either Marlowe himself, or one of his direct imitators and scholars.

Again, when Greene reproaches Marlowe as being a defender of liberty, which Greene chooses to designate as being the doctrine of Machiavelli, and Bame as atheism (see Bame on Marlowe's opinions, Harleian MS. 6853, fol. 320, printed by Dyce), it is doubtful whether by liberty he meant anything more than toleration, as understood by those whom the men in power chose to designate *politiques*; who considered that the State ought to act for the good of the State, not in the interests of the Church; and that useful citizens should not be burned or subjected to penal laws, because they happened to differ in religion from their sovereign, or the majority of their fellow-subjects. This is probably the tenet of Marlowe which Greene describes as teaching that it is "lawful, *fas et nefas*, to do anything that is beneficial." That is, that the general prosperity of the country ought to be aimed at, without attending to the bloodthirsty demands of Whitgift and the clergy, who held that the first thing was, *fas aut nefas*, to reduce the people to unity of belief, and to suppress with equal weight both Puritans and Papists. If this was the charge against Marlowe, it is no prejudice against the probability of an intimate sympathy between him and Shakspeare. That Marlowe was really as much opposed to Machiavelli's reputed teaching as Greene himself may be seen from his prologue to the *Jew of Malta*, where he confesses that Barabas is meant for the maligned philosopher.

Two of the matters I have advanced are facts that can hardly be controverted: the co-operation of Marlowe and Shakspeare in investigating the authorship of the *Groats-worth of Wit*, and Shakspeare's sympathetic mention of the dead poet in *As You Like It*. The rest is hypothesis, which I put forward for the purpose of further inquiry, not as propositions already proved.

B. SIMPSON.

GREENS,
Groats-worth of Wit,
bought with a Million of
Repentaunce.

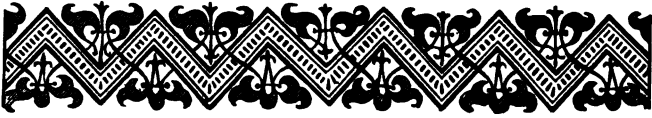
Describing the follie of youth, the falshoode of makeshift
flatterers, the miserie of the negligent, and mischiefes
of deceiuing Courtezans.

*Written before before his death, and published at his
dying request.*

Fælicem fuisse infaustum.



LONDON,
Printed by Thomas Creede, for Richard Oliue,
dwelling in long long Lane, and are there
to be solde. 1596.



THE PRINTER TO

the Gentle Readers.

I Haue published heere, Gentlemen, for your mirth and benefit, *Greenes* groateswoorth of wit. With fundry of his pleafant difcourfes, ye haue beene before delighted: But now hath death giuen a period to his pen; onely this happened into my hands, which I haue published for your pleafures: Accept it fauourably becaufe it was his laft birth, and not leaft worth, in my poore opinion. But I will ceafe to praife that which is aboue my conceit, and leaue it felfe to fpeake for it felfe: and fo abide your learned cenfuring.

Yours, VV. VV.



TO THE GEN-

tlemen Readers

4 **G**entlemen. The Swan sings melodiously before death,
that in all his life time vseth but a iarring found.
Greene, though able inough to write, yet deepliyer
searched with sicknesse then euer heretofore, sendes you his
Swanne-like song, for that he feares he shal neuer againe carroll
8 to you woonted loue layes, neuer againe discover to you youths
pleasures. How euer yet sicknesse, riot, incontinence, haue at
once shown their extremitie, yet, if I recouer, you shall all see
more fresh springs then euer sprang from me, directing you how
12 to liue, yet not disswading you from loue. This is the last I
haue writ; and I feare me, the last I shall write. And how euer
I haue beene censured for some of my former bookes, yet Gen-
tlemen I protest, they were as I had speciall information. But
16 passing them, I commend this to your fauourable censures; and
like an Embrion without shape, I feare me [t] will bee thrust into
the world. If I liue to ende it, it shall be otherwise: if not,
yet will I commend it to your courtesies, that you may as wel

be acquainted with my repentant death, as you haue lamented my carelesse course of life. But as *Nemo ante obitum felix*, so *Acta Exitus*¹ probat: Befeeching therefore to bee deemed hereof as I deserue, I leaue the worke to your likings, and leaue you 4 to your delights.

¹ Orig. *Exitus*.





GREENES

Groatsworth of wit.

IN an Iland bound with the Ocean, there was sometime a Citie situated, made rich by Marchandize, and populous by long space; the name is not mentioned in the Antiquary, or else worne out by times Antiquitie: what it was, it greatly skilles not: but therein thus it happened. An old new made Gentleman herein dwelt, of no small credit, exceeding wealth, and large conscience: he had gathered from many to bestowe vpon one; for though he had two sonnes, he esteemed but one, that, being as himselfe, brought vp to be golde bondman, was therefore held heire apparent of his ill gathered goods.

The other was a Scholler, and married to a proper Gentlewoman, and therefore least regarded; for tis an olde said saw: To learning and law, ther's no greater foe, then they that nothing know: yet was not the father altogether vnlettered, for he had good experience in a *Nouerint*, and by the vniuerfall tearmes therein contained, had driuen many gentlewomen to seeke vnknown countries: wife he was, for he boare office in his parish, and sate as formally in his fox-furd gowne, as if he had beene a very vpriight dealing Burges: he was religious too, neuer without a booke at his belt, and a bolt in his mouth, ready to shoote through his finfull neighbor

20

And Latin he had some where learned, which, though it were but little, yet was it profitable, for he had this Philofophie written in a ring, *Tu tibi cura*, which precept he curiously obserued, being in selfeloue so religious, as he held it no point of charitie to part with any thing, of which he, liuing, might make vse.

24

But as all mortall things are momentarie, and no certaintie can bee founde in this vncertaine world, so *Gorinius*, (for that shall be this Ufurers name) after many a goutie pang that had pincht his exterior
 4 parts, many a curse of the people that mounted into heauens prefece, was at last with his last summons, by a deadly disease arrested; where-
 against when hee had long contended, and was by Phifitions giuen ouer, hee cald his two sonnes before him: and willing to performe
 8 the olde prouerbe, *Qualis vita, finis Ita*, hee thus prepared himselfe, and admonished them.

My sonnes, (for so your mother saide ye were) and so I assure my selfe one of you is, and of the other I wil make no doubt.
 12 You see the time is come, which I thought would neuer haue approached, and we must now be seperated, I feare neuer to meete againe. This sixteene yeares daily haue I liued vexed with disease: and might I liue sixteene more, how euer miserably, I should thinke
 16 it happie. But death is relentlesse, and will not be intreated witleffe: and knowes not what good my gold might do him: senselesse, & hath no pleasure in the delightfull places I would offer him. In breefe, I thinke he hath, with this foole my eldeft sonne, beene brought
 20 vp in the vniuersitie, and therefore accounts that in riches is no vertue. But you my sonne, (laying then his hand on the yongers head) haue thou another spirit: for without wealth, life is a death: what is gentry, if wealth be wanting, but base seruile beggerie? Some comfort yet it
 24 is vnto me, to see how many gallants sprung of noble parents, haue croucht to *Gorinius* to haue sight of his gold: O gold, desired gold, admired golde! and haue lost their patrimonies to *Gorinius*, because they haue not returned by their day that adored creature! How
 28 many schollers haue written rimes in *Gorinius* praise, and receiued (after long capping and reuerence) a fixpeny reward in signe of my superficiall liberalitie. Breefely, my yong *Lucanio*, how I haue bin reuerent, thou seeest, when honest men, I confesse, haue beene set
 32 farre off: for to be rich is to be any thing, wife, honest, worshipfull, or what not? I tell thee my sonne: when I came first to this Cittie, my whole wardrop was onely a sute of white sheepe skins, my wealth an olde Groate, my woooning, the wide world. At this instant (O
 36 greefe to part with it) I haue in readie coyne threescore thousand

pound; in plate and Jewels, xv. thousand; in bonds and specialties, as much; in land, nine hundred pound by the yeere: all which, *Lucanio*, I bequeath to thee; onely I reserue for *Roberto* thy well red brother, an olde Groate, (being the stocke I first began with,) wherewith I 4 with him to buy a groatsworth of wit: for he in my life hath reprooued my maner of life, and therefore at my death, shall not bee contaminated with corrupt gaine.

Heere by the way, Gentlemen, must I disgreffe to shew the reason 8 of *Gorinius* present speech: *Roberto* being come from the Academie, to visit his father, there was a great feast prouided: where for table talke, *Roberto*, knowing his father and most of the companie to be execrable vsurers, inuayed mightily against that abhorred vice, info- 12 much that he vrged teares from diuers of their eyes, and compunccion in some of their hearts. Dinner being past, hee comes to his father, requesting him to take no offence at his liberall speech, seeing what he had vttered was truth. Angrie sonne (saide he) no, by my hon- 16 esty, (& that is somewhat, I may say to you) but vse it still, and if thou canst perswade any of my neighbours from lending vppon vsurie, I should haue the more customers: to which when *Roberto* would haue replied, he shut himselfe into his studie, and fell to telling ouer 20 his money.

This was *Robertos* offence: nowe returne we to sicke *Gorinius*, who, after he had thus vnequally distributed his goods and possessions, began to aske his sons how they liked his bequestes: either seemed 24 agreed, and *Roberto* vrged him with nothing more then repentance of his sin: loke to thine owne, said he, fond boy, and come my *Lucanio*, let me giue thee good counsel before my death: as for you, fir, your bookes are your counsellors, and therefore to them I bequeath 28 you. Ah *Lucanio*, my onely comfort, because I hope thou wilt, as thy father, be a gatherer, let me blesse thee before I die. Multiply in wealth, my sonne, by anie meanes thou maist; onely flie Alchymie, for therein are more deceites then her beggerly Artistes haue wordes; 32 and yet are the wretches more talkatiue then women. But my meaning is, thou shouldest not stand on conscience in causes of profite, but heape treasure vppon treasure, for the time of neede: yet seeme to be deuout, else shalt thou be held vile: frequent holy excercises, 36

grate companie, and aboue all, vse the conuerfation of yong Gentle-
 men, who are fo wedded to prodigalitie, that once in a quarter
 neceffity knocks at their chamber doores: profer them kindneffe to
 4 relieue their wants, but be fure of good affurance: giue faire words
 till dayes of payment come, and then vse my courfe, spare none: what
 though they tell of confcience, (as a number will talke) looke but
 into the dealings of the world, & thou fhalt fee it is but idle words.
 8 Seeft thou not many perifh in the ftreetes, and fall to theft for neede,
 whom fmall fuccor would releuee: then where is confcience, and why
 art thou bound to vse it more then other men? Seeft thou not daily
 forgeries, periuries, oppreffions, rackings of the poore, rayfing of
 12 rents, inhauncing of duties, euen by them that fhuld be all confcience,
 if they meant as they fpeake: but *Lucanio*, if thou reade well this
 booke (and with that hee reacht him *Machiauels* works at large), thou
 fhalt fee what it is to be fo foole-holy, as to make fcruple of con-
 16 fciencie, where profit prefents it felfe.

Befides, thou haft an inftance by thy threed-bare brother heere,
 who, willing to do no wrong, hath loft his child's right: for who would
 wifh any thing to him, that knowes not how to vse it?

20 So much, *Lucanio*, for confcience: and yet I knowe not whats the
 reafon, but fomewhat flings mee inwardly when I fpeake of it. I,
 father, faid *Roberto*, it is the worme of confcience, that vrgees you at
 the laft houre to remember your life, that eterhall life may follow
 24 your repentance. Out foole (faid this miserable father) I feele it now,
 it was onely a fitch. I will forward with my exhortation to *Lucanio*.
 As I faide, my fonne, make fpoyle of yong gallants by infinuating thy
 felfe amongft them; and be not mooued to think their Auncestors
 28 were famous, but confider thine were obfcure, and that thy father
 was the firft Gentleman of the name. *Lucanio*, thou art yet a
 Bachelor, and fo keepe thee, till thou meete with one that is thy
 equall, I meane in wealth: regard not beautie, it is but a baite to
 32 entice thine neighbors eie: and the moft faire are commonly moft
 fond: vse not too many familiars, for few prouue friends; and as eafie
 it is to weigh the wind, as to diue into the thoughts of worldly glosers.
 I tell thee, *Lucanio*, I haue feene foure fcore winters befides the oddé
 36 feauen, yet faw I neuer him that I efteemed as my friend, but gold,

that desired creature, whom I haue deerely loued, and found so firme a friend, as nothing, to me hauing it, hat hbeene wanting. No man but may thinke deerely of a true friend, and so doe I of it, laying it vnder fure locks, and lodging my heart therewith. 4

But now (Ah my *Lucanio*) now must I leaue it; and to thee I leaue it with this lesson, loue none but thy selfe, if thou wilt liue esteemed. So turning him to his study, where his chiefe treasure lay, he loud cried out in the wise mans words, *O mors quam amara*, O 8 death how bitter is thy memorie to him that hath al pleasures in this life; and so with two or three lamentable groanes he left his life: and to make short worke, was by *Lucanio* his sonne enterd, as the custome is, with some solemnitie: But leauing him that hath left the world, 12 to him that¹ censureth of euery worldly man, passe we to his sons: and see how his long laied by store is by *Lucanio* looked into. The youth was of condition simple, shamefast, and flexible to any counsaile, which *Roberto* perceiuing, and pondering how little was left to him, 16 grew into an inward contempt of his fathers vnequall legacie, and determinate resolution to worke *Lucanio* al possible iniurie: hereupon, thus conuerting the sweetnesse of his studie to the sharpe thirst of reunge, he (as Enuie is seldome idle) fought out fit companions 20 to effect his vnbrotherly resolution. Neither in such a case is ill companie farre to seeke, for the Sea hath scarce so [many] ieopardies, as populous Citties haue deceiuing Syrens, whose eies are Adamants, whose wor[d]es are witchcrafts, whose doores leade downe to death. With one 24 of these female Serpents *Roberto* consorts, and they conclude, what euer they compassed, equally to share to their contentes. This match made, *Lucanio* was by his brother brought to the bush, where he had scarce pruned his wings, but hee was fast limed, and *Roberto* had what 28 he expected. But that we may keepe forme, you shall heare how it fortunéd.

Lucanio being on a time very penfiue, his brother brake with him in these tearmes: I wonder, *Lucanio*, why you are so disconsolate, 32 that want not any thing in the world that may worke your content. If wealth may delight a man, you are with that sufficiently furnisht: if credit may procure a man any comfort, your word, I knowe well, is

¹ *Orig. yt.*

as well accepted as any mans obligation : in this Citie are faire build-
 ings and pleafant gardens, and caufe of folace ; of them I am affured
 you haue your choyfe. Confider, brother, you are yong ; then plod not
 4 altogether in meditating on our fathers precepts : which, howfoeuer
 they fauoured of profit, were moft vnfaulerly, to one of your yeeres
 applied. You muft not thinke but certaine Marchants of this Citie
 expect your company, fundry Gentlemen defire your familiaritie, and
 8 by conuerfing with fuch, you will be accounted a Gentleman : other-
 wife a pefant, if ye liue thus obscurely. Befides, which I had almoft
 forgot, and then had all the reft beene nothing, you are a man by
 nature furnifhed with all exquisite proportion, worthy the loue of any
 12 courtly Ladie, be fhe neuer fo amorous : you haue wealth to main-
 taine her, of women not little longed for : wordes to court her you
 fhall not want, for my felfe will be your fecretary. Brieflie, why
 ftande I to diftinguifh abilitie in perticularities, when in one word it may
 16 bee fayde, which no man can gainfay, *Lucanio* lacketh nothing to
 delight a wife, nor any thing but a wife to delight him? My young
 maifter beeing thus clawde, and puft vp with his owne prayfe, made
 no longer delay, but hauing on his holyday hofe, he tricked himfelfe
 20 vp, and like a fellowe that meant good footh, hee clapped his Brother
 on the Shoulder, and fayde : Faith, Brother *Roberto*, and yee fay the
 worde, lets go feeke a wife while it is hote, both of vs together, Ile pay
 well, and I dare turne you loofe to fay as well as anye of them all :
 24 well Ile doe my beft, faid *Roberto*, and fince ye are fo forward, lets
 goe nowe and trie our good fortune.

With this, foorth they walke, and *Roberto* went direētlie towarde
 the houfe where *Lamilia* (for fo wee call the Curtezan) kept her
 28 Hofpitall, which was in the Suburbes of the Cittie, pleafauntly feated,
 and made more delectable by a pleafaunt Garden, wherein it was
 fcituate. No fooner come they within ken, but Miftrefse *Lamilia*
 like a cunning angler made readie her change of baytes, that fhee
 32 might effect *Lucanios* bane : and to begin, fhee difcouered from her
 window her beauteous inticing face, and taking a lute in her hand
 that fhe might the rather allure, fhe fung this Sonnet¹ with a delicious
 voice.

¹ *Orig.* Sounet.

Lamias Song.

*Fie fie on blind fancie,
It hinders youths ioy :
Faire virgins learne by me,* 4
To count loue a toy.

*When Loue learned first the A B C of delight,
And knew no figures, nor conceited phrase :*
He simplie gaued to due desert her right, 8
*He led not louers in darke winding wayes,
He plainly wild to loue, or flatly answered no,
But now who listeth to proue, shall find it nothing so :*

Fie fie then on fancie, 12
*It hinders youths ioy,
Faire virgins learne by me,
To count loue a toy.*

For since he learned to vse the Poets pen, 16
*He learned likewise with smoothing words to faine,
Vitching chaste eares with trothlesse toungs of men,
And wronged faith with falshood and disdain.*

He giues a promise now, anon he sweareth no, 20
Who listeth for to proue, shall find his changings so :

Fie fie then on fancie,
*It hinders youths¹ ioy,
Faire virgins learne by me,* 24
To count loue a toy.

While this painted sepulchre was shadowing her corrupting guilt, Hiena-like alluring to destruction, *Roberto* and *Lucanio* vnder the windowe, kept euen pace with euery stop of her instrument, but 28 especially my yoong Ruffler, (that before time like a bird in a cage, had bene prentise for three liues, or one and twentie yeeres at least, to extreame Auarice, his deceased father) O twas a world to see how he sometime simperd it, struing to fet a countenance on his turnd 32 face, that it might seeme of wainfcot prooffe, to beholde her face without blushing: anone hee would stroake his bowbent-leg, as though he went to shoote loue arrows from his shins: then wipte his chin (for

¹ Orig. *youth*,

his beard was not yet grown) with a gold wrought handkercher, whence of purpose he let fall a handfull of angels. This golden showre was no sooner rained, but *Lamil[i]a* ceast her song, and *Roberto* (assuring 4 himselfe the foole was caught) came to *Lucanio* (that stood now as one that had starde *Medusa* in the face) and awaked him from his amazement with these words: What, in a traunce, brother? whence springs these dumps? are yee amazed at this obiect? or long ye to 8 become loues subiect? Is there not difference betweene this delectable life, and the imprisonment you haue all your life hitherto endured? If the sight and hearing of this harmonious beautie work in you effects of wonder, what will the possession of so diuine an 12 effence, wherein beautie and Art dwell in their perfectest excellencie? Brother, said *Lucanio*, lets vse few words, and she be no more then a woman, I trust youle helpe mee to her! and if you doe, well, I say no more, but I am yours till death vs depart, and what is mine, shal 16 be yours, world without end, Amen.

Roberto, smiling at his simpleness, helpt him to gather vp his dropt golde, and without any more circumstance led him to *Lamilias* house: for of such places it may be said as of hell,

20

Noctes atque dies patet atri ianua ditis.

So their doores are euer open to entice youth to destruction. They were no sooner entred, but *Lamilia* her selfe, like a second *Helen*, court like begins to salute *Roberto*, yet did her wandring eie glance 24 often at *Lucanio*: the effect of her entertainment consisted in these tearmes, that to her simple house Signor *Roberto* was welcome, and his brother the better welcome for your sake: albeit his good report, confirmed by his present demeanor, were of it selfe enough to giue 28 him deserued entertainment, in any place how honourable soeuer: mutuall thanks returned, they lead this prodigal childe into a Parlor garnished with goodly portratures of amiable personages: neere which an excellent confort of musicke began at their entrance to play. 32 *Lamilia*, seeing *Lucanio* shamefast, tooke him by the hand, and tenderly wringing him, vsed these words: Beleeue me, Gentleman, I am verie forie that our rude enter[tain]ment is such, as no way may worke your content: for this I haue noted since your first entering, that

your countenance hath beene heauie, and the face being the glasse of the heart, assures me the same is not quiet : would ye wish any thing heere that might content you, say but the word, and assure ye of present deliuerance to effect your full delight. *Lucanio* being so farre 4 in loue, as he perswaded himselfe without her grant hee could not lue, had a good meaning to vtter his minde, but wanting fit wordes, hee stode like a trewant that lackt a prompter, or a plaiet, that being out of his part at his first entrance, is faine to haue the booke to 8 speake what he should performe. Which *Roberto* perceiuing, replied thus in his behalfe : Madame, the Sunnes brightnesse daisleth the beholders eies ; the maiestie of Gods amazed humane men ; *Tullie*, Prince of Orators, once fainted, though his cause were good ; and he 12 that tamed monstres, stode amated at beauties ornaments : Then blame not this yoong man though hee replied not, for he is blinded with the beautie of your sunne-darkening eies, made mute with the celestially organe of your voyce, and feare of that rich ambush of 16 amber colored darts, whose pointes are leuelde against his heart. Well, Signor *Roberto* faide shee, how euer you interpret their sharpe leuell, be sure they are not bent to doe him hurt ; and but that modestie blinds vs poore Maidens from vttering the inwarde forrowe of our 20 mindes, perchance the cause of greefe is ours, how euer men do colour, for as I am a virgin, I protest, (and therewithall shee tainted her cheekes with a vermilion blush) I neuer sawe Gentleman in my life, in my eie, so gracious as is *Lucanio* ; onely that is my greefe, that 24 either I am despised, for that he scornes to speake, or else (which is my greater forrow) I feare he cannot speake. Not speake, Gentlewoman, quoth *Lucanio* ? that were a ieast indeede ! yes, I thanke God I am sounde of winde and lim, onely my heart is not as it was woont : 28 but and you be as good as your word, that will soone be well, and so crauing ye of more acquaintance, in token of my plaine meaning receiue this diamond, which my olde father loued deerely : and with that deliuered her a Ring, wherein was a pointed ¹ Diamond of won- 32 derfull worth. Which shee accepting with a lowe conge, returned him a filke Riband for a fauour, tyed with a truelouers knot, which he fastened vnder a faire Iewell on his Beuer felt. [1 *Orig.* a pointed a]

After this *Diamedis & Glauci permutatio*, my yoong master waxed 36

cranke, and the musicke continuing, was very forward in dauncing, to
 shew his cunning : and so desiring them to play on a hornpipe, laid
 on the pauement lustily with his leaden heeles, coruetting like a steede
 4 of *Signor Roccoes* teaching, and wanted nothing but bells, to bee a
 hobbyhorse in a morrice. Yet was he soothed in his folly ; and what
 euer he did, *Lamilia* counted excellent : her praise made him proude,
 infomuch, that if he had not beene intreated, hee would rather haue
 8 died in his daunce, then left off to shew his mistresse delight. At last
 reasonably perswaded, seeing the table furnished, he was contented to
 cease, and fettle himselfe to his victuals, on which (hauing before
 labored) he fed lustily, especially of a Woodcocke pie, wherewith
 12 *Lamilia* his caruer, plentifully plied him. Full dishes hauing furnisht
 emptie stomackes, and *Lucanio* thereby got leifure to talke, falles to
 discourse of his wealth, his lands, his bonds, his abilitie, and how him-
 selfe, with all he had, was at Madame *Lamilias* disposing : desiring her
 16 afore his brother, to tell him simply what she meant. *Lamilia*
 replied : My sweet *Lucanio*, how I esteeme of thee, mine eies doe
 witnesse, that, like handmaidens, haue attended thy beautious face euer
 since I first beheld thee : yet seeing loue that lasteth gathereth by
 20 degrees his liking, let this for that suffice : if I finde thee firme,
Lamilia will be faithful : if fleeting, she must of necessitie be infor-
 tunate that, hauing neuer seene any whome before shee could affect,
 shee shoulde bee of him iniuriously forsaken. Nay, saide *Lucanio*, I
 24 dare say my brother here wil giue his word : for that I accept your
 own, said *Lamilia*, for with me your credit is better then your
 brothers. *Roberto* brake off their amorous prattle with these
 speeches : Sith either of you are of other so fond at the first sight, I
 28 doubt not but time will make your loue more firme. Yet, madame
Lamilia, although my brother and you be thus forward, some crosse
 chaunce may come : for *Multa cadunt inter calicem supremaque labe*.
 And for a warning to teach you both wit, Ile tell you an olde wiuens
 32 tale.

Before ye go on with your tale (quoth mistresse *Lamilia*) let me
 giue ye a caueat by the way, which shall be figured in a Fable.

Lamiliaes Fable.

He Foxe on a time came to visite the Gray, partly for kindered, cheefely for craft : and finding the hole emptie of all other companie, fauing onely one Badger, enquiring 4 the cause of his solitarieffe, he described the sodaine death of his dam and fire, with the rest of his conforsts. The Foxe made a Friday face, counterfeiting forrow : but concluding that deaths stroke was vneuitable, perswaded him to seeke some fit mate wherwith to 8 match. The Badger soone agreed, so forth they went, and in their way met with a wanton ewe straggling from the fold : the Foxe bad the Badger play the tall strippling, and strouit on his tiptoes : for (quoth he) this ewe is lady of al these lands, and her brother cheefe belwea- 12 ther of fundrie flocks. To be short, by the Foxes perswasion there would be a perpetuall league, betweene her harmelessse kindred, and al other deuouring beafts, for that the Badger was to them all allied : seduced, shee yeilded : and the Foxe conducted them to the Badgers 16 habitation. Where, drawing her aside vnder color of exhortation, pulde out her throate to satisfie his greedie thirst. Here I should note, a yong whelp that viewed their walke, infourmed the shepheard of what hapned. They followed, and trained the Foxe and 20 Badger to the hole : the Foxe afore had craftily conuaied himself away ; the shepheard found the Badger raving for the ewes murther ; his lamentation being helde for counterfet, was by the sheapheards dog wearied. The Foxe escaped : the ewe was spoiled ; and euer since, 24 betweene the Badgers and the dogges hath continued a mortall enmitie : And now be aduised *Roberto* (quoth she) goe forward with your tale ; seeke not by flie insinuation to turne our mirth to forrow. Go too *Lamilia* (quoth hee) you feare what I meane not, but how 28 euer ye take it, Ile forward with my tale.

Robertoes Tale.

IN the North parts there dwelt an old Squier, that had a yong daughter his heire ; who had (as I know, Madame 32 *Lamilia*, you haue had) many youthfull Gentlemen that long time sued to obtaine her loue. But she, knowing her owne perfection (as women are by nature proude), woulde not to any

of them vouchsafe fauour : infomuch that they, perceiuing her relent-
 leffe, shewed themfelues not altogether witleffe, but left her to her
 fortune, when they founde her frowardneffe. At last it fortunéd
 4 among other strangers, a Farmers sonne visited her fathers house : on
 whom at the first sight shee was enamored, he likewise on hir.
 Tokens of loue past betweene them, either acquainted others parents
 of their choise, and they kindly gaue their consent. Short tale to
 8 make, married they were, and great solemnitie was at the wedding
 feast. A yong Gentleman, that had beene long a suter to her, vexing
 that the sonne of a farmer should be so preferred, cast in his minde
 by what meanes (to marre their merriment) he might steale away the
 12 Bride. Hereupon he confers with an old beldam, called mother
Gunby, dwelling thereby ; whose counsell hauing taken, he fell to his
 practise, and proceeded thus. In the after noone, when dauncers
 were very busie, he takes the Bride by the hand, and after a turne or
 16 two, tels her in her eare, he had a secret to impart vnto her, appoint-
 ing her in any wise, in the euening to find a time to confer with him :
 she promised she would, and so they parted. Then goes he to the
 bridegroome, and with protestations of entire affect, protests that the
 20 great sorrow hee takes at that which he must vtter, wheron depended
 his especial credit, if it were knowne the matter by him should be
 discourered. After the bridegroomes promise of secrecie, the gentle-
 man tels him, that a friend of his receiued that morning from y
 24 bride a letter, wherin she willed him with some sixteene horse to
 awaite her comming at a Parke side, for that she detested him in
 her heart as a base country hinde, with whom her father compelled
 her to marrie. The bridegroome almost out of his wits, began to bite
 28 his lippe. Nay, saith the Gentleman, if you will by me be aduised,
 you shall saue her credit, win her by kindnes, and yet preuent her
 wanton complot. As how, said the Bridegroome ? Mary thus, said
 the gentleman : In the euening (for till the guests be gone, she intends
 32 not to gad) get you on horsebacke, and seeme to be of the companie
 that attends her comming : I am appointed to bring her from the
 house to the Parke, and from thence fetch a winding compasse
 of a mile about, but to turne vnto olde mother *Gunbyes* house,
 36 where her louer, my friend, abides : when she alights, I wil

conduct her to a chamber far from his lodging, but when the lights are out, and she expects her adulterous copefmate, your selfe (as reason is) shall prooue her bedfellow, where priuately you may reprove her, and in the morning earely returne home without 4 trouble. As for the gentleman, my friend, I will excuse her absence to him, by saying, shee mockt thee with her maide in stead of her selfe, whom when I knew at her lighting, I disdained to bring her vnto his presence. The Bridgroome gaue his hand it should be so. 8

Now by the way we must vnderstand, this mother *Gunby* had a daughter, who all that day fate heauily at home with a willow garland, for that the bridegroome (if he had dealt faithfully) should haue wedded her before any other. But men (*Lamilia*) are vnconstant; 12 mony now a daies makes the match, or else the match is marde.

But to the matter: the bridegroome and the Gentleman thus agreed: he tooke his time, conferred with the bride, perswaded her that her husband (notwithstanding his faire shew at the marriage) had 16 sworne to his olde sweete heart, their neighbour *Gunbyes* daughter, to be that night her bedfellow: and if she would bring her father, his father, and other friends to the house at midnight, they should finde it so. 20

At this the yong gentlewoman inwardly vext to be by a peasant fo abused, promised, if she sawe likelyhood of his slipping away, that then she would doe according as he directed.

All this thus forting, the old womans daughter was trickly attired, 24 ready to furnish this pageant, for her old mother prouided all things necessarie.

Well, Supper past, dauncing ended, all the guests would home; and the Bridgroome, pretending to bring some friend of his home, got 28 his horse, and to the Parke side he rode, and staid with the horsemen that attended the Gentleman.

Anone came *Marian* like mistress Bride, and mounted behind the gentleman, away they post, fetch their compasse, & at last alight at 32 an olde wiues house, where sodenly she is conuaied to her chamber, & the bridegroome sent to keepe her company, where he had scarce deuised how to begin his exhortation, but the father of his bride knockt at the chamber doore. At which being somewhat amazed, 36

yet thinking to turne it to a ieast, sith his wife (as he thought) was
 in bed with him, hee opened the doore, saying: Father, you are
 heartily welcome, I wonder how you found vs out heere; this deuise
 4 to remooue our selues, was with my wiues consent, that we might
 rest quietly without the Maids and Batchelers disturbing vs. But
 where is your wife, said that¹ gentleman? why, heere in bed, said he. I
 thought (quoth the other) my daughter had beene your wife, for sure
 8 I am to day shee was giuen you in marriage. You are merrily dis-
 posed, said the Bridegroom: what, thinke you I haue another wife?
 I thinke but as you speake, quoth the gentleman, for my daughter is
 below, & you say your wife is in the bed. Below (said he) you are a
 12 merie man, and with that, casting on a night gowne, he went downe,
 where, when he saw his wife, the gentleman his father, and a number
 of his friends assembled, he was so confounded, that how to behaue
 himselfe he knew not; onely hee cried out that he was deceiued. At
 16 this the olde woman arises, and making her selfe ignorant of al the
 whole matter, enquires the cause of that sodaine tumult. When she
 was tolde the new bridegroom was found in bed with her daughter,
 she exclaimed against so great an iniurie. *Marian* was called in
 20 quorum: she iustified it was by his allurement: he, being condemned
 by al their consents, was iudged vnworthy to haue the gentlewoman
 vnto his wife, & compelled (for escaping of punishment) to marrie
Marian: and the yong Gentleman (for his care in discouering the
 24 farmers sonnes lewdnes) was recompensd with the Gentlewomans euer
 during loue. [¹ Orig. yt.

Quoth *Lamilia*, and what of this? Nay, nothing, saide *Roberto*,
 but that I haue told you the effects of sodaine loue: yet the best is,
 28 my brother is a maidenly batcheler; and for your selfe, you haue not
 beene troubled with many suters. The fewer the better, said *Lucanio*.
 But brother, I con you little thanke for this tale; hereafter I pray you
 vse other table talke. Lets then end talk, quoth *Lamilia*, and you
 32 (signor *Lucanio*) and I will goe to the Chesse. To Chesse, said he,
 what meane you by that? It is a game, said she, that the first danger
 is but a checke, the worst, the giuing of a mate. Wel, said *Roberto*,
 that game ye haue beene at already then, for you checkt him first
 36 with your beauty, & gaue your self for mate to him by your bountie.

That is wel taken, brother, said *Lucanio*, so haue we past our game at Cheffe. Wil ye play at tables then, said she? I cannot, quoth he, for I can goe no furder with my game, if I be once taken. Will ye play then at cards? I, said he, if it be at one and thirtie. That fooles 4 game, said she? Weele all to hazard, said *Roberto*; and, brother, you shall make one for an houre or two: contented, quoth he. So to dice they went, and fortune so fauoured *Lucania*, that while they continued square play, he was no loofer. Anone cofonage came about, 8 and his Angels being double winged, flew cleane from before him. *Lamilia* being the winner, prepared a banquet; which finished, *Roberto* aduised his brother to depart home, and to furnish himselfe with more crowns, leaft he were outcrakt with new commers. 12

Lucania, loath to be out countenanft, followed his aduise, desiring to attend his returne, which he before had determined vnrequested: for as soone as his brothers backe was turned, *Roberto* begins to reckon with *Lamilia*, to bee a sharer, as well in the mony deceitfully woonne, 16 as in the Diamond so wilfully giuen. But she, *secundum mores meretricis*, iested thus with the scholler: Why *Roberto*, are you so well read, and yet shew your selfe so shallow witted, to deeme women so weake of conceit, that they see not into mens demerites. Suppose 20 (to make you my stale to catch the woodcocke your brother) that my tongue ouerrunning mine intent, I spake of liberal rewarde: but what I promised, there is the point; at least, what I part with, I will be well aduised. It may be you wil thus reason: Had not *Roberto* 24 trained *Lucanio* vnto *Lamilias* lure, *Lucanio* had not now beene *Lamilias* pray: therefore, sith by *Roberto* she possesseth her prize, *Roberto* merites an equall part. Monstrous absurd, if so you reason; as wel you may reason thus: *Lamilias* dog hath kilde her a deere, 28 therefore his mistris must make him a pastie. No, poore penniless Poet, thou art beguilde in me; and yet I wonder how thou couldest, thou hast beene so often beguilde. But it fareth with licentious men, as with the chafed bore in the streame, who, being greatly refreshed 32 with swimming, neuer feeleth any smart vntill he perish, recurelessly wounded with his owne weapons. Reasonlesse *Roberto*, that hauing but a brokers place, asked a lenders reward. Faithlesse *Roberto*, that hast attempted to betray thy brother, irreligiouly forsaken thy wife, 36

deferuedly beene in thy fathers eie an abiect : thinkest thou *Lamilia* fo loofe, to confort with one fo lewd? No, hypocrite, the sweete Gentleman thy brother, I will till death loue; and thee, while I liue, 4 loath. This share *Lamilia* giues thee; other gettest thou none.

As *Roberto* would haue replied, *Lucanio* approched: to whom *Lamilia* discourst the whole deceit of his brother, & neuer rested intimating malitious arguments, till *Lucanio* vtterly refused *Roberto* 8 for his brother, and for euer forbad him of his house. And when he wold haue yeilded reafons, and formed excuse, *Lucanios* impatience (vrged by her importunate malice) forbad all reasoning with them that was reasonlesse, and so, giuing him Iacke Drums entertainment, 12 shut him out of doores: whom we will follow, and leaue *Lucanio* to the mercie of *Lamilia*. *Roberto*, in an extreame extasie, rent his haire, curst his destinie, blamed his trecherie, but moft of all exclaimed against *Lamilia*, and in her against all enticing Curtizans, in these 16 tearmes.

*What meant the Poets to inuectiue verse,
To sing Medeas shame, and Scillas pride,
Calipsoes charmes, by which so many dide?*

20 *Onely for this, their vices they rehearse,
That curious wits which in this world conuerse,
May shun the dangers and enticing shoes,
Of such false Syrens, those home-breeding foes,*

24 *That from their eies their venom do disperse.
So soone kils not the Bafiliske with fight,
The Vipers tooth is not so venemous,
The Adders tung not halfe so dangerous,*

28 *As they that beare the shadow of delight,
Who chaine blinde youths in tramels of their haire,
Till wast bring woe, and sorrow hast despaire.*

With this he laide his head on his hand, and leant his elbow on the 32 ground, sighing out fadly,

Heu patior telis vulnera facta meis!

On the other side of the hedge fate one that heard his forrow, who

getting ouer, came towards him, and brake off his passion. When he approached, he saluted *Roberto* in this sort :

Gentleman, quoth hee, (for so you seeme) I haue by chauce heard you discourse some part of your greefe ; which appeareth to be more 4
then you will discouer, or I can conceipt. But if you vouchsafe such
fimple comfort as my abilitie will yeeld, assure your selfe, that I will
endeuour to doe the best, that either may procure your profit, or
bring you pleasure : the rather, for that I suppose you are a scholler ; 8
and pittie it is men of learning should liue in lacke.

Roberto wondring to heare such good words, for that this iron age
affoordes few that esteeme of vertue, returned him thankfull gratula-
tions, and (vrged by necessitie) vttered his present greefe, beseeching 12
his aduise how he might be employed. Why, easily, quoth hee, and
greatly to your benefit : for men of my profession get by schollers
their whole liuing. What is your profession, sayd *Roberto* ? Truly
fir, said he, I am a player. A Player, quoth *Roberto*, I tooke you 16
rather for a gentleman of great liuing ; for if by outward habit men
shuld be censured, I tell you, you would be taken for a substantiall
man. So am I where I dwell (quoth the player) reputed able at my
proper cost, to build a Windmill. What though the worlde once 20
went hard with mee, when I was faine to carrie my playing Fardle a
footebacke ; *Tempora mutantur* : I know you know the meaning of it
better then I, but I thus conster it, it is otherwise now ; for my very
share in playing apparrell will not be folde for two hundred pounds. 24
Truely (said *Roberto*) it is strange, that you should so prosper in that
vaine practise, for that it seemes to me your voyce is nothing gracious.
Nay then, said the player, I mislike your iudgement : why, I am as
famous for Delphrigus, and the king of Fairies, as euer was any of my 28
time. The twelue labors of *Hercules* haue I terribly thundred on the
stage, and plaied three scenes of the deuill in the highway to heauen.
Haue ye so (said *Roberto* ?) then I pray you pardon me. Nay more
(quoth the player) I can serue to make a prettie speech, for I was a 32
countrie Author, passing at a morrall, for it was I that pende the
Morrall of mans wit, the Dialogue of Diues, and for seauen yeeres
space was absolute interpreter of the puppets. But now my Alma-
nacke is out of date :

*The people make no estimation,
Of Morralls teaching education.*

Was not this prettie for a plaine rime extempore? if ye will, ye
4 shall haue more. Nay it is enough, said *Roberto*, but how meane
you to vse mee? Why sir, in making playes, said the other, for
which you shall be well paied, if you will take the paines.

Roberto perceiuing no remedie, thought best, to respect of his
8 present necessity, to trie his wit, & went with him willingly: who
lodged him at the townes end in a house of retaile, where what hap-
pened our Poet, you shall heereafter heare. There, by conuerfing
with bad company, he grew *A malo in peius*, falling from one vice to
12 another; and so, hauing found a vaine to finger crownes, he grew
cranker then *Lucanio*, who by this time began to droope, being thus
dealt withall by *Lamilia*. She, hauing bewitched him with her
enticing wiles, caused him to consume in lesse then two yeares, that
16 infinite treasure gathered by his father, with so many a poore mañs
curse. His lands sold, his iewels pawnd, his money wafted, he was
caffeed by *Lamilia* that had coofened him of all. Then walked he
like one of duke *Humfreys* Squires, in a threedbare cloake, his hose
20 drawne out with his heeles, his shooes vnfeamed, left his feete should
fweate with heate: now (as witleffe as he was) hee remembered his
fathers words, his kindnes to his brother, his carelesnesse of himselfe.
In this sorrow hee fate downe on pennileffe bench; where when
24 *Opus* and *Vfus* told him by the chimes in his stomacke, it was time
to fall vnto meate, he was faine with the *Camelion* to feed vpon the
aire, & make patience his best repast.

While he was at his feast, *Lamilia* came flaunting by, garnished
28 with the iewels whereof she beguiled him; which sight serued to
close his stomacke after his cold cheere. *Roberto* hearing of his
brothers beggerie, albeit he had little remorse of his miserable state,
yet did he seeke him out, to vse him as a propertie, whereby *Lucanio*
32 was somewhat prouided for. But being of simple nature, hee serued
but for a blocke to whet *Robertoes* wit on: which the poore foole
perceiuing, he forooke all other hopes of life, and fell to be a
notorious Pandar, in which detested course hee continued till death.
36 But *Roberto*, nowe famozed for an Arch-plaimaking-poet, his purfe

like the sea somtime fweld, anon like the same sea fell to a low ebbe ; yet feldom he wanted, his labors were so well esteemed. Marry, this rule he kept, what euer he fingerd aforehand, was the certaine meanes to vnbinde a bargaine ; and being asked why he so sleightly dealt with 4 them that did him good ? It becomes me, sath hee, to be contrarie to the worlde : for commonly when vulgar men receiue earnest, they doe performe ; when I am paid any thing afore-hand, I breake my promise. He had shift of lodgings, where in euery place his Hostesse 8 writ vp the wofull remembrance of him, his laundresse, and his boy ; for they were euer his in houshold, beside retainers in fundry other places. His companie were lightly the lewdest persons in the land, apt for pilferie, periurie, forgerie, or any villainie. Of these, hee knew 12 the casts to cog at Cards, coofin at Dice ; by these, he learned the legerdemaines of nips, foystes, connicatchers, crosbyters, lifts, high Lawyers, and all the rabble of that vncleane generation of vipers : and pithily could he paint out their whole courses of craft : So cunning 16 he was in all crafts, as nothing rested in him almost but craftinesse. How often the Gentlewoman his wife laboured vainely to recall him, is lamentable to note : but as one giuen ouer to all lewdnes, he communicated her sorrowfull lines among his loose truls, that iested at 20 her bootelesse laments. If he could any way get credite on scores, he would then brag his creditors carried stones, comparing euerie round circle to a groning O, procured by a painfull burden. The shamefull ende of fundry his consorts, deseruedly punished for their amisse, 24 wrought no compunction in his heart : of which one, brother to a Brothell he kept, was trust vnder a tree as round [as] a Ball.

To some of his swearing companions thus it happened : A crue of them sitting in a Tauerne carowfing, it fortun'd an honest Gentleman, 28 and his friend, to enter their roome : some of them being acquainted with him, in their domineering drunken vaine, would haue no nay, but downe he must needs fitte with them ; beeing placed, no remedie there was, but he must needs keepe euen compasse with their vn- 32 seemely carowfing. Which he refusing, they fell from high wordes to found strokes, so that with much adoe the Gentleman faued his owne, and shifted from their company. Being gone, one of these tiplers forsooth lackt a gold Ring, the other sware they see the Gentleman 36

take it from his hande. Upon this the Gentleman was indited before a Iudge: these honest men are deposed: whose wisdom, weighing the time of the braule, gave light to the Iury, what power wine-
4 washing poyson had: they, according vnto conscience, found the Gentleman not guiltie, and God released by that verdict the innocent.

With his accusers thus it fared: One of them for murder was worthily executed: the other neuer since prospered: the third,
8 fitting not long after vpon a lustie horse, the beast suddenly died vnder him: God amend the man.

Roberto, euery day acquainted with these examples, was notwithstanding nothing bettered, but rather hardened in wickednesse. At
12 last was that place iustified, God warneth men by dreams and visions in the night, and by knowne examples in the day; but if he returne not, hee comes vpon him with iudgement that shall bee felt. For now, when the number of deceites caused *Roberto* bee hatefull almost
16 to all men, his immeasurable drinking had made him the perfect Image of the droppe, and the loathsome scourge of Lust tyrannized in his bones: liuing in extreame pouerty, and hauing nothing to pay but chalke, which now his Host accepted not for currant, this miser-
20 able man lay comfortlesly languishing, hauing but one groat left (the iust proportion of his fathers Legacie) which looking on, he cried: O now it is too late, too late to buy witte with thee: and therefore will I see if I can sell to carelesse youth what I negligently forgot to buy.
24 Heere (Gentlemen) breake I off *Robertos* speech; whose life in most parts agreeing with mine, found one selfe punishment as I haue doone. Heereafter suppose me the said *Roberto*, and I will goe on with that hee promised: *Greene* will send you new¹ his groa[t]sworth
28 of wit, that neuer shewed a mites-worth in his life: and though no man now be by, to doe me good, yet ere I die, I will by my repentance indeuour to doe all men good.

[1 ? now]

Deceiuing world, that with alluring toys,
32 *Hast made my life the subiect of thy scorne:*
And scornest now to lend thy fading ioyes,
To lengthen my life, whom friends haue left forlorne.
How well are they that die ere they be borne,
36 *And neuer see thy sleights, which few men shun,*
Till vnawares they helpleffe are vndon.

*Oft haue I sung of loue, and of his fire ;
 But now I finde that Poet was aduixde,
 Which made full feasts increasers of desire,
 And prooues weake loue was with the poore despizde. 4
 For when the life with foode is not suffizde,
 *What thoughts of loue, what motion of delight,
 What pleasance, can proceede from such a wight ?**

*VVitnesse my want, the murderer of my wit ; 8
 My rauisht sense, of woonted furie rest,
 VVants such conceit, as should in Poims fit.
 Set downe the sorrow wherein I am left :
 But therefore haue high heauens their gifts bereft : 12
 *Because so long they lent them me to vse,
 And I so long their bountie did abuse.**

*O that a yeare were granted me to liue,
 And for that yeare my former wits restorde : 16
 VVhat rules of life, what counsell would I giue ?
 How should my sinne with sorrow be deplorde¹ ?
 But I must die of euery man abhorde. [1 Orig. then deplore]
 *Time loofely spent will not againe be woonne, 20
 My time is loofely spent, and I vndone.**

O horrenda fames, how terrible are thy assaultes : but Vermis con-
scientiae, more wounding are thy ftings. Ah Gentlemen, that liue to 24
reade my broken and confused lines, looke not I should (as I was
wont) delight you with vaine fantasies, but gather my follies alto-
gether, and, as you would deale with so many parricides, cast them
into the fire : call them Telegones, for now they kill their father, and 28
euerie lewd line in them written, is a deep piercing wound to my
heart ; euery idle houre spent by any in reading them, brings a
million of sorrowes to my foule. O that the teares of a miserable
man (for neuer any man was yet more miserable) might wash their 32
memorie out with my death ; and that those works with me together
might be interd. But sith they cannot, let this my last worke witnes
against them with me, how I detest them. Blacke is the remem-

brance of my blacke works, blacker then night, blacker then death,
blacker then hell.

Learne wit by my repentance (Gentlemen) and let these fewe rules
4 following be regarded in your liues.

1 First, in all your actions set God before your eies; for the feare of
the Lord is the beginning of wisedome: Let his word be a lanterne
to your feete, and a light vnto your paths, then shall you stand as
8 firme rocks, and not be mocked.

2 Beware of looking backe, for God will not be mocked; of him
that hath receiued much, much shall be demanded.

3 If thou be single, and canst abstaine, turne thy eies from vanitie,
12 for there is a kinde of women bearing the faces of Angels, but the
hearts of Deuils, able to intrap the elect, if it were possible.

4 If thou be m[a]rried, forsake not the wife of thy youth to follow
strange flesh; for whoremongers and adulterers the Lord will iudge.
16 The doore of a Harlot leadeth downe to death, and in her lips there
dwels destruction; her face is decked with odors, but shee bringeth
a man to a morfell of bread and nakednesse: of which my selfe am
instance.

20 5 If thou be left rich, remember those that want; and so deale,
that by thy wilfulnes thy self want not: Let not Tauerners and
Vuctuallers be thy Executors; for they will bring thee to a dishon-
orable graue.

24 6 Oppresse no man, for the crie of the wronged ascendeth to the
eares of the Lord: neither delight to encrease by Vfurie, least thou
loose thy habitation in the euerlasting Tabernacle.

7 Beware of building thy house to thy neighbours hurt; for the
28 stones will crie to the timber; We were laide together in bloud: and
those that so erect houses, calling them by their names, shall lie in
the graue like sheepe, and death shall gnaw vpon their foules.

8 If thou be poore, be also patient, and striue not to grow rich
32 by indirect meanes; for goods so gotten shall vanish away like
smoke.

9 If thou be a father, maister, or teacher, ioyne good examples
with good counsaile; else little auaille precepts, where life is dif-
36 ferent.

10 If thou be a fonne or feruant, despise not reproofe; for though correction be bitter at the first, it bringeth pleasure in the end.

Had I regarded the first of these rules, or beene obedient at the last; I had not now at my last ende, beene left thus desolate. But 4 now, though to my selfe I giue *Consilium post facta*; yet to others they may serue for timely precepts. And therefore (while life giues leaue) will send warning to my olde consorts, which haue liued as loofely as my selfe; albeit weakenesse will scarce suffer me to write, 8 yet to my fellowe Schollers about this Cittie, will I direct these few insuing lines.

*To those Gentlemen, his Quondam acquaintance,
that spend their wits in making Plaies, R. G.
wisheth a better exercise, and wisdom
to preuent his extremities.*

12



IF wofull experience may mooue you (Gentlemen) to beware, or vnheard of wretchednes intreate you to take 16 heed: I doubt not but you will looke backe with sorrow on your time past, and endeouour with repentance to spend that which is to come. Wonder not, (for with thee wil I first begin) thou famous gracer of Tragedians, that *Greene*, who hath said with 20 thee, like the foole in his heart, There is no God, should now giue glorie vnto his greatnesse: for, penetrating is his power, his hand lies heauie vpon me, he hath spoken vnto me with a voice of thunder, and I haue left, he is a God that can punish enimies. Why should 24 thy excellent wit, his gift, be so blinded, that thou shouldst giue no glory to the giuer? Is it pestilent Machiuilian pollicie that thou hast studied? O punish follie! What are his rules but meere confused mockeries, able to extirpate in small time, the generation of mankinde. 28 For if *Sic volo, sic iubeo*, hold in those that are able to command: and if it be lawfull *Fas & nefas* to doe any thing that is beneficiall; onely Tyrants should possesse the earth; and they, struing to exceede in tyranny, should each to other bee a slaughter man; till the mightiest 32 outliuing all, one stroke were left for Death, that in one age mans life should ende. The brother of this Diabolicall Atheisme is dead, and in his life had neuer the felicitie he aimed at: but as he began

in craft, liued in feare, and ended in despaire. *Quum inscrutabilia sunt Dei iudicia?* This murderer of many brethren, had his conscience feared like *Caine*: this betrayer of him that gaue his life for
 4 him, inherited the portion of *Judas*: this Apostata perished as ill as
Iulian: and wilt thou, my friend, be his Disciple? Looke vnto me,
 by him perswaded to that libertie, and thou shalt finde it an infernall
 bondage. I knowe the least of my demerits merit this miserable
 8 death; but wilfull striuing against knowne truth, exceedeth al the
 terrors of my soule. Defer not (with me) till this last point of ex-
 tremitie; for little knowest thou how in the end thou shalt be visited.

With thee I ioyne young *Iuuenall*, that byting Satyrifist, that lastlie
 12 with mee together writ a Comedie. Sweete boy, might I aduise
 thee, be aduised, and get not many enemies by bitter words: inueigh
 against vaine men, for thou canst do it, no man better, no man so
 wel: thou hast a libertie to reprove all, and name none; for one
 16 being spoken to, al are offended; none being blamed, no man is
 iniured. Stop shallow water still running, it will rage; tread on a
 worme, and it will turne: then blame not schollers vexed with sharpe
 lines, if they reprove thy too much libertie of reproofe.

20 And thou no lesse deseruing then the other two, in some things
 rarer, in nothing inferiour; driuen (as my selfe) to extreame shifts; a
 little haue I to say to thee: and were it not an idolatrous oth, I would
 sweare by sweet *S. George*, thou art vnworthie better hap, sith thou
 24 dependest on so meane a stay. Base minded men al three of you, if
 by my miserie ye be not warned: for vnto none of you (like me)
 fought those burres to cleaue: those Puppits (I meane) that speake
 from our mouths, those Anticks garnisht in our colours. Is it not
 28 strange that I, to whom they al haue beene beholding: is it not like
 that you, to whome they all haue beene beholding, shall (were ye in
 that case that I am now) be both at once of them forsaken? Yes,
 trust them not: for there is an vpstart Crow, beautified with our
 32 feathers, that with his *Tyggers heart wrapt in a Players hide*, supposes
 he is as well able to bumbaft out a blanke verse as the best of you:
 and being an absolute *Iohannes fac totum*, is in his owne conceit the
 onely Shake-scene in a countrie. O that I might intreate your rare
 36 wits to be employed in more profitable courses: & let these Apes
 imitate your past excellence, and neuer more acquaint them with your

admired inuentions. I know the best husband of you all will neuer proue an Vfurur, and the kindest of them all wil neuer proue a kinde nurse: yet, whilst you may, seeke you better Maisters; for it is pittie men of such rare wits, should be subiect to the pleasures of such rude groomes.

In this I might infert two more, that both haue writ against these buckram Gentlemen: but let their owne works serue to witnesse against their owne wickednesse, if they perseuer to maintaine any more such peasants. For other new commers, I leaue them to the mercie of these painted monsters, who (I doubt not) will driue the best minded to despise them: for the rest, if skils not though they make a leaft at them.

12

But now returne I againe to you three,¹ knowing my miserie is to you no news: and let me heartily intreate you to bee warned by my harmes. Delight not (as I haue done) in irreligious oaths; for, from the blasphemers house, a curse shall not depart. Despiſe drunkennes, which wasteth the wit, and maketh² men all equal vnto beasts. Flie lust, as the deathsmā of the soule, and defile not the Temple of the holy ghost. Abhorre those Epicures, whose loose life hath made religion lothsome to your eares: and when they sooth you with tearmes of Maisterſhip, remember *Robert Greene*, whome they haue often so flattered, perishes now for want of comfort. Remember, gentlemen, your liues are like so many lighted Tapers, that are with care deliuered to all of you to maintaine: these with wind-puft wrath may be extinguisht, which drunkennes put out, which negligence let fall: for mans time of it selfe is not so short, but it is more shortened by sin. The fire of my light is now at the last snuffe, and the want of wherwith to sustaine it; there is no substance left for life to feede on. Trust not then (I beseech yee) to such weake staies: for they are as changeable in minde, as in many attires. Well, my hand is tired, and I am forst to leaue where I would begin: for a whole booke cannot containe their wrongs, which I am forst to knit vp in some few lines of words.

*Desirous that you should liue, though
himselſe be dying.*

Robert Greene.

36

¹ Orig. three.

² Orig. making.

³ Orig. though.

Now to all men I bid farewell in this fort, with this conceited
Fable of the olde Comedian *Aesope*.

4 **A**N Ant and a Grafhopper walking together on a greene,
the one careleffely skipping, the other carefully prying
what winters prouision was scattered in the way: the
Grafhopper scorning (as wantons wil) this needeleffe thrift
(as he tearmed it), reprooued him thus:

8 *The greedie miser thirsteth still for gaine ;
His thrift is theft, his weale works others woe :
That foole is fond, which will in caues remaine,
When mongst faire sweetes he may at pleasure goe.*

12 To this the Ant, perceiuing the Grafhoppers meaning, quickly
replied :

*The thriftie husband spares what vnthrifts spends ;
His thrift no theft, for dangers to provide :
16 Trust to thy selfe, small hope in want yeeld friendes ;
A caue is better then the desarts wide.*

In fhort time these two parted, the one to his pleasure, the other
to his labour. Anon Haruest grewe on, and rest from the Grafhopper
20 his woonted moyfture. Then weakely skips he to the medows brinks :
where till fell winter he abode. But stormes continually powring,
hee went for succour to the Ant his olde acquaintance, to whome
he had scarce discouered his estate, but the little worme made this
24 replie.

*Pack hence (quoth he) thou idle lazie worme ;
My house doth harbour no vnthriftie mates :
Thou scornedst to toile, and now thou feelst the storme,
28 And starust for foode while I am fed with cates.
Use no intreats, I will relentlesse rest,
For toyling labour hates an idle guest.*

The Grafhopper foodlesse, helpelesse, and strengthlesse, got into
32 the next brooke, and in the yeelding sand digde himselfe a pit: by
which likewise he ingraued this Epitaph.

*When Springs greene prime arrayd me with delight,
And euery power, with youthfull vigor fild,
Gauē strength to worke what euer fancie wild :
I neuer feard the force of winters spight.* 4

*When first I saw the sunne the day begin,
And drie the mornings teares from hearbs and grasse :
I little thought his chearefull light would passe,
Till vgly night with darknes enterd in :
And then day lost I mournd, spring past I waild,
But neither teares for this or that auaild.* 8

*Then too too late I praisd the Emmets paine,
That fought in spring a harbour gainst the heate :
And in the haruest gathered winters meate,
Perceiuing famine, frosts, and stormie raine.* 12

*My wretched end may warne Greene springing youth
To vse delights, as toyes that will deceiue,
And scorne the world before the world them leaue :
For all worlds trust, is ruine without ruth.
Then blest are they, that, like the toyling Ant,
Prouide in time gainst winters wofull want.* 16 20

With this the grasshopper, yeelding to the weathers extremit[ie], died comfortlesse without remedie. Like him, my selfe : like me, shall al that trust to friends or times inconstancie. Now faint I of my last infirmitie, beseeching them that shal burie my bodie, to publish this 24 last farewell, written with my wretched hand.

Fœlicem fuisse infaustum.

*A letter written to his wife, found with this
booke after his death.* 28



He remembrance of many wrongs offered thee, and thy vnreprooued vertues, adde greater forrow to my miserable state, then I can vtter, or thou conceiue. Neither is it lessened by consideration of thy absence (though shame 32

would let me hardly beholde thy face) but exceedingly aggrauated,
 for that I cannot (as I ought) to thy owne selfe reconcile my selfe,
 that thou mightest witnesse my inward woe at this instant, that haue
 4 made thee a wofull wife for so long a time. But equal heauen hath
 denied that comfort, giuing at my last neede, like succour as I haue
 fought all my life: being in this extremitie as voide of helpe, as thou
 hast beene of hope. Reason would, that after so long waste, I should
 8 not send thee a childe to bring thee greater charge: but confider, he
 is the fruit of thy wombe, in whose face regard not the fathers faults
 so much as thy owne perfections. He is yet Greene, and may grow
 straight, if he be carefully tended: otherwise, apt enough (I feare
 12 me) to follow his fathers folly. That I haue offended thee highly, I
 knowe; that thou canst forget my iniuries, I hardly beleue: yet per-
 swade I my selfe, if thou saw my wretched estate, thou couldest not
 but lament it: nay certainly I knowe thou wouldest. Al my wrongs
 16 muster themselues about me, euery euill at once plagues me. For
 my contempt of God, I am contemned of men: for my swearing
 and forswearing, no man will beleue me: for my gluttony, I suffer
 hunger: for my drunkenneffe, thirst: for my adulterie, vlcereous
 20 sores. Thus God hath cast me downe, that I might be humbled:
 and punished me, for example of others sinne: and although he suffers
 me in this world to perish without succor, yet trust I in the
 world to come to finde mercie, by the merits of my
 24 Sauour, to whome I commend thee,
 and commit my soule.

*Thy repentant husband for his dis-
 loyaltye, Robert Greene.*

28

Fœlicem fuisse infaustum.

FINIS.

KIND-HARTS DREAME.

Conteining fve Apparitions, vwith their
Inuectiues against abufes raing.

*Deliuered by feuerall Ghosts vnto him to
be publisht, after Piers Penillesse Post
had refused the carriage.*

Inuita Inuidiæ.

by H. C.



Imprinted at London for William Wright.



To the Gentlemen Readers.

I *Thath beene a custome, Gentle men, (in my mind commendable) among former Authors (whose workes are no lesse beautified with eloquente phrase, than garnished with excellent example) to begin an exordium to the Readers of their time : much more conuenient I take it, should the writers in these daies (wherein that grauitie of enditing by the elder exercised, is not obseru'd, nor that modest decorum kept, which they continued) submit their labours to the fauourable censures of their learned ouerseers. For seeing nothing can be said, that hath not been before said, the singlaritie of some mens conceits, (otherwayes excellent well deseruing) are no more to be soothed, than the peremptorie posies of two very sufficient Translators commended. To come in print is not to seeke praise, but to craue pardon : I am vrgd to the one ; and bold to begge the other : he that offendes, being forst, is more excusable than the wilfull faultie ; though both be guilty, there is difference in the guilt. To obserue custome, and auoid as I may, cauill, opposing your fauors against my feare, Ile shew reason for my present writing, and after proceed to sue for pardon. About three moneths snce died M. Robert Greene, leauing many papers in sundry Booke sellers hands, among other his Groatworth of wit, in which a letter written to diuers play-makers, is offensiuely by*

one or two of them taken; and because on the dead they cannot be
auenged, they wilfully forge in their conceites a liuing Author:
and after tossing it two and fro, no remedy, but it must light on
4 me. How I haue all the time of my conuerfing in printing
hindred the bitter inueying againſt ſchollers, it hath been very
well knowne; and how in that I dealt, I can ſufficiently prooue.
With neither of them that take offence was I acquainted, and
8 with one of them I care not if I neuer be: The other, whome at
that time I did not ſo much ſpare, as ſince I wiſh I had, for that
as I haue moderated the heate of liuing writers, and might haue
vſde my owne diſcretion (eſpecially in ſuch a caſe) the Author
12 beeing dead, that I did not, I am as ſory as if the original
fault had benee my fault, becauſe my ſelfe haue ſeene his de
meanor no leſſe ciuill, than he exelent in the qualitie he profeſſes
: Befides, diuers of worſhip haue reported his vprightnes of
16 dealing, which argues his honeſty, and his facetious grace in
writting, that aprooues his Art. For the firſt, whoſe learning
reuerence, and at the peruſing of Greenes Booke, ſtroke out wha
then in conſcience I thought he in ſome diſpleaſure writ: or ha
20 it benee true, yet to publiſh it, was intollerable: him I woul
wiſh to vſe me no worſe than I deſerue. I had onely in the cop
this ſhare: it was il written, as ſometime Greenes hand was nor
of the beſt; licenſd it muſt be, ere it could bee printed, which cou
24 neuer be if it might not be read. To be breiſe, I writ it ouer; and
as neare as I could, followed the copy; onely in that letter I put
ſomething out, but in the whole booke not a worde in; for I proteſt
it was all Greenes, not mine nor Maiſter Nashes, as ſome
28 vniuſtly haue affirmed. Neither was he the writer of an Epiſtle

to the second part of Gerileon, though by the workemans error T. N. were set to the end: that I confesse to be mine, and repent it not.

Thus Gentlemen, hauing noted the priuate causes that made 4 me nominate my selfe in print; being aswell to purge Master Nashe of that he did not, as to iustifie what I did, and withall to confirme what M. Greene did: I beseech yee accept the publike cause, which is both the desire of your delight, and common 8 benefite: for though the toyee bee shadowed vnder the Title of Kind-hearts Dreame, it discouers the false hearts of diuers that wake to commit mischiefe. Had not the former reasons been, it had come forth without a father: and then shuld I haue had no 12 cause to feare offending, or reason to sue for fauour. Now am I in doubt of the one, though I hope of the other; which if I obtaine, you shall bind me hereafter to bee silent, till I can present yee with some thing more acceptable.

16

Henrie Chettle.

[*Note.* The head- and tail-pieces, and big initials, in these reprints, are not like those of the originals. The stops are partly modernised.—F.]



Kind-hartes Dedication of his dreame, to all
the pleasant conceited vvhersoever.



Entlemen and good-fellowes, (whose kindnes hauing christened mee with the name of Kind-heart, bindes me in 4
all kind course I can to deserue the continuance of
your loue) let it not seeme strange (I beseech ye) that he that
all daies of his life hath bene famous for drawing teeth, should
now in drooping age hazard contemptible infamie by drawing him- 8
selfe into print. For such is the folly of this age, so witleffe, so
audacious, that there are scarce so manye pedlers brag themselues to
be printers because they haue a bundel of ballads in their packe, as
there be idiots that thinke themselues Artifts, because they can English 12
an obligation, or write a true staffe to the tune of fortune. This folly
raging vniuersally, hath infired me, to write the remembrance of
sundry of my deceased frends, personages not altogether obscure, for
then were my subiect base, nor yet of any honourable carriage, for my 16
stile is rude and bad: and to such as I it belongs not to iest with
Gods. Kind-hart would haue his companions esteeme of Estates as
starres, on whome meane men maye looke, but not ouer-looke. I
haue heard of an eloquent Orator, that trimly furnished with warres 20
abiliments, had on his shield this *Motto, Bona fortuna*: yet at the first
meeting of the enemy fled with out fight. For which being re-
prooued, he replied: If I haue saued my selfe in this battell by flight,

I shal liue to chafe the enemy in the next. So Gentlemen fares it with mee: If enuious misconsterers arme themselues against my simple meaning, and wrest euery iest to a wrong sence, I thinke it policy to
4 fly at the first fight, till I gather fresh forces to repress their folly.

Neither can they, what euer they be, deale hardly with Kind-hart, for he onely deliuers his dreame, with euery Apparition, simply as it was vttered. Its fond for them to fight against ghosts: its fearefull for
8 me to hide an Apparition: by concealing it I might doe my selfe harme, and them no good; by reuealing it, ease my hart, and doe no honest men hurt: for the rest (although I would not willing[ly] moue the meanest) they must beare as I doe, or mend it as they may. Well,
12 least ye deeme all my dreame but an Epistle, I will proceed to that without any further circumstance.



The Dreame.

Sitting alone not long since, not far from *Finburie*, in a Taphouse of Antiquity, attending the comming of such companions as might wash care away with carowing: 4
Sleeppe, the attendant vpon a distempred bodies, bereft the sunnes light by couering mine eies with her fable mantle, and left me in nights shade, though the daies eie shinde; so powerfull was my receiued potion, so heauie my passion: whence (by my hostisse care) 8
being remoued to a pleasant parlor, the windowes opening to the East, I was laid softly on a downe bed, and couered with equall furniture; where, how long I slept quietly, I am not well assured, but in the time I intended to rest, I was thus by visible apparitions disturbd. 12

First, after a harsh and confused sound, it seemed there entered¹ at once fise perfonages, feuerally attired, and diuersly qualified, three bearing instruments, their faouours pleasant; two appearing to be Artifts, their countenances reuerend. 16

The first of the first three was an od old fellow, low of stature, his head was couered with a round cap, his body with a fide skirted tawney coate, his legs and feete trust vppe in leather buskins, his gray haire and furrowed face witnessed his age, his treble violl in his hande, 20
assured me of his profession. On which (by his continuall sawing, hauing left but one string) after his best manner, hee gaue me a hunts- vp: whome, after a little musing, I assuredly remembered to be no other but old Anthony Now now. 24

The next, by his sute of ruffet, his buttond cap, his taber, his standing on the toe, and other tricks, I knew to be either the body or resemblance of Tarlton, who liuing, for his pleasant conceits was of all men liked, and dying, for mirth left not his like. 28

¹ *Orig.* enrered.

The third (as the first) was an olde fellowe, his beard milkewhite, his head couered with a round lowe crownd rent filke hat, on which was a band knit in many knotes, wherein stucke two round stickes
 4 after the Iuglers manner. His ierkin was of leather cut, his cloake of three coulers, his hose painted with yellow drawn out with blew, his instrument was a bagpipe: & him I knew to be William Cuckoe, better knowne than lou'd, and yet some thinke as well lou'd as he was
 8 worthy.

The other two had in their countenances a reuerent grace: the one which was the elder, seeming more seuerer, was in habite like a
 Doctor; in his right hand hee held a Compendium of all the famous
 12 Phisitions and Surgions workes beeloning to Theorike, in his left
 hand a table of all instruments for mans health, appertaining to
 practise.

At the sight of this Doctor, you maye thinke, Gentlemen, Kind
 16 hart was in a pitious case: for I verily beleueed he had beene some
 rare Artift, that, taking me for a dead man, had come to anatomize
 me; but taking comfort that my thrumde hat, had hanging at it the
 ensignes of my occupation, like a tall fellow (as to me it seemed) I
 20 lookte him in the face, and beheld him to bee maister Doctor Burcote
 (though a stranger, yet in England for phisicke famous.)

With him was the fifth, a man of indifferent yeares, of face amiable,
 of body well proportioned, his attire after the habite of a schollerlike
 24 Gentleman, onely his haire was somewhat long, whome I supposed
 to be Robert Greene, maister of Artes: of whome (howe euer formerly
 suppose themselues iniured) I haue learned to speake, considering
 he is dead, *nill nisi necessarium*.

28 He was of singular pleasaunce the very supporter, and, to no mans
 disgrace bee this intended, the only Comedian of a vulgar writer
 in this country.

Well, thus these fiue appeared, and by them in post past a knight
 32 the post, whome in times past I haue seen as highly promoted as the
 pillory: but I haue heard since he was a diuell, that plaide the Carier
 of Pierce penileffe packet to Lucifer, and was now returning to con-
 taminat the ayre, with his pestilent periuries, and abhominable false
 36 witnesse bearing.

How Pierce his supplication pleased his Patron, I know not, but sure I take it this Friend had a foule check for meddling in the matter: for when all these five before named had made profer of feuerall bills inuectiue against abuses raigning, this diuelish Messenger repulsed 4 them wrathfully, and bad them get some other to bee their packet bearer if they list, for he had almost hazarded his credit in hell, by beeing a Broker betweene Pierce Penileffe and his Lord: and so, without hearing their reply, flew from them like a whirle wind. With 8 that, (after a small pause) in a round ring they compassed my bed, and thrusting into my hand all their papers, they at once charged mee to awake, and publish them to the world.

This charge seemed to mee most dreadfull of all the dreame, be- 12 cause in that the distinguishing of their feuerall voices was heard, farre from the frequent manner of mens speach. In fine, *Cuckoe* with his pipes, and *Antony* with his Crowd, keeping equall equipage first left my sight; *Tarlton* with his Taber fetchi[n]g two or three leaden 16 friskes, shortly followed, and the Doctor and maister Greene immediately vanished.

With this (not a little amazed, as one from a trance reuiued) I roud vp my selfe: when sodainly out of my hand fell the five 20 papers, which confirmed my dreame to bee no fantise. Yet (for that I knew the times are daungerous) I thought good aduisedly to read them, before I presumed to make them publick.

So by chance lighting first on *Antony nownowe* I 24
found on the outside, as follows
on the other side.

(††)





*The friendly Admonition of Antho-
nie Now now, to Mopo and
Pickering, Arch-ouerseers of the
Ballad singers, in London, or
else-where.*

4

ANthony now now, a Gods blessing, to his louing and liuing Bretheren Mopo and Pickering, greeting: whereas by the daily recourse of infinit numbers to the infernall regions, 8 whose plaintes to be heard are no lesse lamentable, then their paines to be felt intollerable, I am giuen to vnderstand, that there be a company of idle youths, loathing honest labour and dispising lawfull trades, betake them to a vagrant and vicious life, in euery 12 corner of Cities & market Townes of the Realme singing and selling of ballads and pamphletes full of ribaudrie, and all scurrilous vanity, to the prophanation of Gods name, and with-drawing people from christian exercises, especially at faires, markets, and such publike meetings, 16 I humbly desire ye that ye ioyne with another of your bretheren, free of one Citie and profession, that alwaies delighting in godly songes, is now in his age betaken to his beads, and liueth by the dolefull tolling of Deaths bell warning. Deere frendes, I beseech you ioyntly to agree 20 to the suppressing of the aforementioned idle vagabonds. And that I right incite (as I hope) your forward effectes, I will particularize the difference betweene the abused times among you reputed, and the simplicitie of the daies wherein I liued. Withall, I wish ye to expect 24 no greater matter then *Anthonyes* capacity can comprehend. When I was liked, there was no thought of that idle vpstart generation of ballad-singers, neither was there a printer so lewd that would set

finger to a lasciuious line. But I perceiue the times are changed, and men are changed in the times. For not long since a number of children were bolstered by some vnwoorthy Citizens and other free
 4 men in Townes Corporate to exercise a base libertine life in fingering
 anye thing that came to hand from some of the Diuels instruments,
 intruders into printings misserie, by whome that excelent Art is not
 smally slandered, the gouernment of the estate not a little blemished,
 8 nor Religion in the least measure hindred. And to shut vp al in the
 last, is it not lamentable that after so many callings, so many blessings,
 so many warnings, through the couetous desire of gaine of some two
 or three, such a flocke of Run-agates shoulde ouerspred the face of
 12 this land, as at this time it doth. They that intend to infect a riuier,
 poison the fountaine; the Basiliske woundeth a man by the eie, whose
 light first failing, the body of force descends to darknes.

These Basilisks, these bad minded monsters, brought forth like
 16 vipers by their mothers bane, with such lasciuious lewdnes haue first
 infected London, the eie of England, the head of other Cities, as what
 is so lewd that hath not there, contrary to order, bene printed, and in
 euery streete abusiuely chanted. This error (ouer spreding the realme)
 20 hath in no small measure increased in Essex, and the shires thereto
 adioyning, by the bluthlesse faces of certaine Babies, sonnes to one
Barnes, most frequenting Bishops Stafford. The olde fellow their
 father, soothing his sonnes folly, resting his crabbed limes on a crab-
 24 tree staffe, was wont (and I thinke yet he vses) to seuer himselfe from
 the Booth, or rather Brothell of his two sons Ballad shambels: where,
 the one in a sweaking treble, the other in an ale-blowne base, carrowle
 out such aduoltrous ribaudry, as chaste eares abhorre to heare, and mo-
 28 destie hath no tongue to vtter.

While they are in the ruffe of ribaudrie, (as I was about to say) the
 olde ale-knight, their dad, breakes out into admiration, and sends
 stragling customers to admire the roaring of his sonnes: where, that I
 32 may shoue some abuses, and yet for shame let slip the most odious,
 they heare no better matter, but the lasciuious vnder songs of Wat-
 kins ale, the Carmans whistle, Choppingkniues, and frier foxtaile, and
 that with such odious and detested boldnes, as if there be any one line
 36 in those lewd songs than other more abhominable, that with a double

repetition is lowdly belowed, as for example of the frier and the nunne.

He whipt her with a foxes taile, Barnes minor,

And he whipt her with a foxes taile, Barnes maior.

4

O braue boies, faith *Barnes maximus*. The father leapes, the lubers roare, the people runne, the Diuell laughs, God lowers, and good men weepe. Nay, no sooner haue the godly preachers deliuered wholesome doctrine, but these impes of iniquitie, and such as imitate 8 their order, draw whole heapes to hearken to their iniquitated cries, as if they were hearde of the Gergihites fwine, ready to receiue whole legions of soule-drowning spirites.

Stephen, Mopo, and Pickering, I muse you make no complaint to 12 those worshipfull that haue authority to restraine such straglers; for this is to be proued, of whome soeuer they buy them, that these two *Barnes* vtter more licentious songs, then all that part of England beside.

16

Shamefull it is (had they any shame) that men brought vppe to an honest handicraft, of which the realme more need then iygging vanities, should betake them to so impudent a course of life. The Rogue that liueth idly is restrained, the fidler and plaier that is 20 maisterl[e]sse is in the same predicament: both these by the law are burned in the eare: and shall men more odious scape vnpunished?

It were to be wisht, if they will not be warnd, that aswell the fingers, as their supporters, were burned in the tongue that they might 24 rather be euer vtterly mute, then the triumphers of so many mischiefes. Neither are these two alone in fault, though they stand worthely formost as *Malorum Duces*; but besides them, others more then a good many, some (as I haue heard say) taken to be apprentices 28 by a worthlesse companion (if it proue true that is of him reported) being of a worshipfull trade, and yet no Stationer, who, after a little bringing them vppe to finging brokerie, takes into his shop some fresh men, and trusts his olde fearuantes of a two months standing with a 32 doffen groates worth of ballads. In which if they prooue thrifty, hee makes them prety chapmen, able to spread more pamphlets by the state forbidden, then all the Bookefellers in London; for only in this Citie is straight search, abroad smale suspection, especially of such petty 36

pedlers. Neither is he for these flies only in fault, but the Gouerners of cutpurse hall, finding that their company wondrously increast, howeuer manye of their beste workemen monthly miscande at the three
4 foot crosse, they tooke counsaile how they might find some new exercise to imploy their number.

One of the ancientest that had beene a traueller, and at Brainetree faire feene the resort to the standinges of the forenamed brethren, the
8 sonnes of olde Barnes the Plummer, chose out roaringe Dicke, Wat Wimbars, *cum multis aliis* of tune-able trebles, that gathered fundry
assemblies in diuers places, where, yer a leaud songe was fully ended, some mist their kniues, some their purses, soome one thinge, soome
12 another. And alasfe, who woulde suspecte my innocente youthes, that all the while were pleasinge rude peoples eyes and eares, with no les
delectable noife, then their ditties were delightfome: the one beeing too odious to bee read, the other too infectious to be heard. Well,
16 how euer they sung, it is like they shared: for it hath beene saide, they themfelues bragge, they gayned their twenty shillings in a day. Ah
brother Mopo, many a hard meale haue you made, and as many a time hath Curtell, your foure-footed traueiler, beene pincht for want of
20 prouander, and yet at the weekes ende haue you hardly taken tenne shillings. But I perswade my selfe you gaine by your honest labour, and they by legerdemaine. To tell you your owne iniuries, by them
euery where offered, neede not: to wish you to speake to them, it
24 bootes not. Therefore this is my counsaile, and let it be your course: Make humble suite to her Maiesties Officers, that they may bee
hencefoorth prohibited: intreate the Preachers that they inuaye againste this vice, whiche, though it seeme small to other abuses, yet
28 as a graine of mustard seeede it encreases, and bringeth fourth more mischiefes, then few wordes can expresse, or much diligence make voide. Firft, if there be any songes suffered in such publike sorte to
be soong, beseech that they may either be such as your selues, that
32 after seauen yeares or more seruice, haue no other liuinge lefte you out of Pattennt, but that poore base life, of it selfe too badde, yet made
more beggerly, by increase of number: or at least if any¹ besides you be therto admitted, than it may be none other but aged and impotent

¹ *Orig.* if any if.

persons : who, liuinge vpon charity, may the rather draw those that
 delight in good songs, to haue mercy on their neede. For to sing
 publikely, is by a kinde of tolleration, permitted only to beggars, of
 which number, it is not necessary to make them that haue seene no 4
 number of yeares, nor are in the members of their bodies imperfect.
 Is it not absurde to see a long legd lubber pinned in a chayre, fedde
 with a dugge, dreste with a bibbe, and rockte in a cradle? As vile it
 is, that boyes of able strength, and agreeable capacity, should bee 8
 suffered to wrest from the miserable Aged, the last refuge in their life
 (beggery excepted) the poore helpe of Ballad-singing. Many a cruft
 hath old Anthony gotte by it, Mopo, beside other comfortes : but now
 I heare my blinde brother that exercisde the base, is forced to lay his 12
 fiddle to pawne, and trust onely to the two and thirtieth Psalm, and
 Iob patience, for his poore belly-pinching pittauce. Once againe I
 tourne mee in your names to the Maiestrates, and Preachers of London,
 and as to them, so to others else-where in the Realme. Right honor- 16
 able, reuerend, or worshipfull, Anthony humbly desires you, to looke
 into the leaud cause, that these wicked effects may fall. The people
 deligthe to heare some new thinge : if these prophane ribauldries were
 not : somewhat fauering of godlinesse, of policy, or at the vtmost of 20
 morrall witte, should be receiued. It is common, that they which
 haue capacitye, when they heare either Diuinitye, Lawe, or other
 Artes, apply their memories to receiue them ; and as they haue con-
 ceiued, they bringe forth fruites : so fares it by the contrary, when 24
 they heare lasciuious surquedry, leudnesse, impiety, they yeeld no
 other haruest, than they receiued seede : for who canne gather grapes
 of thornes, or figges of thistles? It would bee thought the Carman
 that was woonte to whistle to his beastes a comfortable note, might 28
 aswell continue his olde course, wherby his sounde serued for a muscalle
 harmony in Gods eare, as now profanely to follow a Iigging vanity,
 which can bee no better than odious before God, sith it is abhomin-
 able in the eares of good men. But all is one, they are suffred, which 32
 makes them secure ; and there is no impietye but the baser flatter
 themselues in, because they are not more stricktly reprehended by their
 betters. If euery idle word shall be aunswared for, how shall they
 escape that suffer whole dayes to bee consumed in abhominable bro- 36

thelry. Well, at the handes of the sheapheard shall the flocke be challenged: there is a mercy that kiffeth Iustice; euery other tolleration is finnefull and shamefull. Heere Anthony now now ceases: knowing
 4 the superiours haue discretion, vpon true information, to deale as befeemes them. I onely vrge my brother Mopo, S. P. and Pickeringe, to beseech that lasciuious fingers may bee vtterlye suppressed, as they will shew themselues to bee the men they should be; wherein if they
 8 faile, let them liue euer in perpetuall pouertye, and fare at all tymes as harde as poor Mopos Cut did with his maisters countreyman in Shorditch, till, by the force of his hinder heeles, he vtterly vndid two milch maydens, that had set vp a shoppe of Ale-drapery. Subscribed

12

Anthony now now a Gods blessing.

When I had read this rabble, wherein I found little reason, I laide it by, intendinge at more time to seeke out Mopo, and his mentioned companions. The nexte paper I chaunced on, was that of Maister
 16 Doctour Burcot:

The supercription thus.

To the impudent discreditors of Phisickes Art,
 either speedy amendement or
 punishment.

INiurious enemies to Arts, that haue sought to make Phisick, 4
 among common people, esteemed common, and Chi-
 rurgery contemptible: to you is this my Breefe addresssed ;
 for since I lefte the earth, commaunded by him that
 disposes of euery creature, I vnderstande foome greene-headed scoffers 8
 at my greene receipt, haue intermedled in matters more then they
 conceiue, and by that folly effected much lesse then they promised.
 It was helde of olde for a principle, and not long since obserued as a
 custome, that as the nightes Battes, fore-runners of darkenessse, neuer 12
 flickered in the streetes till the Sunne was declinde, and then euery
 where blindly flapped in mennes faces: so the Owles of Artes, blinde-
 flinder-mise (as I may tearme them) confirming the old Oracle, 16
 neuer shewe themselues but in corners, giuing their rules for that they
 vnderstand not, to the losse of life, or mans dismembringe. Every
 simple hath his vertue, euery disease his beginning: but the remedy
 riseth from the knowledge of the cause: If any can (in naturall sence) 20
 giue ease, they must be Artistes, that are able to searck the cause,
 resist the disease, by prouiding remedies. How fares it then, blinde
 abusers of the blind, your blushles faces are so seasoned, that you can
 in print or publike writings, open the skirtes of your shame, by pro-
 mising sight to the blinde, found ioyntes to the gowty, steady members 24
 to the Paraletike, strong limmes to the lame, quicke hearing to the
 deafe, sence to the franticke. To begin with I. D. one of your sight
 healers: was it not wel handled by him, when a gentleman of good
 account hauing onely a heate in one of his eies, hee, like a kinde 28
 christian, perswaded the patient to receiue a water preferuatiue to the
 found eie, that it might draw the humor from the first, when in very
 truth by his cunning hee so dealt, that not an eie was left in his head
 whereby hee might wel see, sauing that by the ey that was first sore 32
 he can with much adoo looke through a chrifall. Thus this cogging

fight-giuer dranke a hundred marke, and vtterly impaired the paiers fight.

O obscure knaue, worthy to bee so well knowne, that thine eies 4 being thruft out of thy head in a publike affembly, thou mightest¹ no more attempt to make blinde thy betters. There was a Gentleman in the world, troubled not long fince with a paine in the foote: Phifitions found it to be the gout; againft which malady promifing no 8 precise remedy, but onely to giue eafe for the time, did their dailye indeuour, by defenfues preuenting paine that would haue prooued offenfue. He, impatient of delay, forfooke all hopes of art, and deliuered ouer hys life into the hands of fome of thefe trauelers that by 12 incifion are able to eafe all atches. If a fenfible man (conceiuing their tyranny on him vfed) fhuld note their cuttings, drawings, corrofiuings, boxings, butcherings, they wold conclude, *Non erat inter Siculos tormentum maius*. Yet forfooth, who but thefe are welcome to difeafed 16 or endaungered people. The reafon, they will vndertake to warrant what no wife man can; & if it happen by ftrong conceipt fome haue comfort, then to the worlds wonder in old wiues monuments are they remembred. Short tale to make: after many tortures, God gaue the 20 gentleman eafe by death.

For the dead Palfie, there is a woman hath a defperate drinke, that either helps in a yeare, or kills in an hour. Befide, fhee hath a charme that, mumbled thrice ouer the eare, together with oyle of 24 *Suamone* (as fhe tearmes it) will make them that can heare but a little, heare in fhort time neuer a whit. But aboue all her Medicine for the quartine Ague, is admirable. viz. A pinte of exceeding ftrong march beere, wherein is infused one drope of *Aqua mirabilis*, this 28 taken at a draught before the fit is intollerable good: and for a pre-fident, let this ferue.

A Gentlewoman about London whofe husband is heire of a right woorthipfull houfe, was induced to take this drench, from this wife 32 woman: for euery drop of that ftrong water fhe muft haue twelue pence. A fponefull at the leaft was prizde at fortie fhillings. Thus daily for almoft a moneth fhe miniftred: the Gentlewoman hauing ftill good hope, at laft was put by her husband quite out of comfort for

¹ *Orig.* mightstest.

any good at this womans handes, for he by chance getting the deceiuers glasse, would needes poure out a spunefull, what euer he paid; she cried out she could not spare it; all helpt not, he tooke it and tasted, and found it to be no other then fountaine water. 4

There was one Bond-man or free-man (it skiles not much whether) that by wondrous ready meanes would heale madmen: what expectation was of him by his great promises, all London knowes; howe lewdly hee delt, it can as well witnesse: of him I will say little, because 8 there is more knowne then I am able to set downe.

Besides these run-agates, there are some of good experience, that giuing themselues to inordinate excessse, when they are writ vnto by learned phisitions to minister for the patients health according to their 12 aduised prescription, negligently mistake. As for example, a Doctor directs to his Poticary a bill to minister to a man hauing an vlcereous sore, certaine pills for the preparing of his body; withall, a receipt for the making a corrofiue, to apply to the sore; hee (either witles, which 16 is too bad, or wilfull, which is worse) prepares the corrofiue in pilles, and formes the Receipt for the pilles in manner of a playster.

The partie receiues the corrofiue inward, his mawe is fretted, death followes. If there be such an Apothecary that hath so done, let him 20 repent his dealings, leaft the bloud of that man light on his head.

It is said there was another skilfull, no lesse ouerseene, that hauinge a poore manne of a legge to dismember, who had long time beene his patient, & at the instant, more extreameley painde then before, 24 which was cause of requiringe his Chirurgians immediate helpe. This woorkeman, the poore patientes deathes-maister, in that pointe not to bee tearmed his owne Artes maister, dismembred him, the signe beeing in the foote. Whereof beeing tolde, immediately after 28 the deede, hee onely merrited this praise, by giuing counsel to the murthered man to haue patience at his suddaine ende.

But these accidentes amonge Artistes happen as seldome as the prooffe of a good cure amonge you that are vtterly ignoraunt in Arte: 32 for their faultes are committed by them rarely or neuer; your trespasses, like a quotidian disease. So of the one it may bee saide, Wine is a mocker, and strong drincke is raginge, and those that bee thereby deceiued are not wise. Yet of the other may directly bee concluded 36

to their single commendation, that as no serpent is without his hidden
 ftinge, or anie thing in earth without some blemish: so no purity of
 their impure profession, can be equalled in imperfection, so impure is
 4 all, so vile, so daungerous.

Therefore now returne I where I began, to you the excrementes of
 nature, and monsters of menne, whose murders are no lesse common
 then your craftes, whiche are not so well knowne to the world, as felt
 8 by them that leaue it: with two of you will I ende. The one a brag-
 gart of great antiquity, whose liuely image is yet to bee seene in King
 Luds Pallace, and his liuing Ghost at this time minifringe to the
 poore Pensioners of that place. Sirra, nay it shall be, fir, in reuerence
 12 of your old occupation, I muse not a little what wonderfull Mettalline
 preparatiue it is ye boast on: by which, were men so mad to beleue
 you, you are able to make any manne not onely boldely to walke in
 ill ayres, and conuerse daye and nighte with infected companye, but
 16 also to receiue the strongest poison (like king *Mithridates*) into his
 body? Tenne to one, it is so strange, as no man but your selfe is able
 to name it. Yet giue mee leaue to gesse at it without offence to your
 falsehoode. I remember I haue heard great talke, you haue bene both
 20 a caster of mettall, and a forger; and it seemes you haue gotten the
 receipte which the Tinne-melters wife ministred, to breake her huf-
 bandes colde, when he fate sleeping in his chaire, videlicet, two ounces
 of pure Tinne put in an iron ladle, melted in the fire, and poured at
 24 an instant downe the throat. If it be thus, I dare take your woord for
 any poyson hurting that partie that so receiues it, for as a simple fel-
 lowe (seeing foure or fiue handd for their offences, and hearing some
 speake bitterly of them beeing deade) saide, Well, God make them
 28 good men, they haue a faire warning: so I may say, they that deale
 with your mettalline medicine haue a faire warrante against poison:
 Likewise may it be saide of your admirable eie water, through the
 vertue of whiche you haue attained the woorthipfull name of Doctor
 32 put out: hauinge put out soome of their eies that deale with it. But
 if I haue varied from your mettalline receipt before, I conclude it but
 a forgerie, and so blame you not greatly for followinge a parcell of
 your olde and (to some a) hurtfull trade.

36 Another of your bretheren, as wel ouer seene in mineralls as your

selfe, lying in a good fellowes house not long since, being monileffe,
 (as ye are all but thred bare make-shiftes,) perswaded his hoast to take
 phisicke for feare of infection; his labour he was content to giue, and
 nothing for their kindnesse would hee require but euen siue marke, 4
 which he must pay for the very simples. His simple hoast beleeuing
 him to bee honest, gaue him the money. If hee had leste heere,
 though this had beene to lewd, it had beene farre better than to go
 forward as he did; for some what hee bestowed on purging simples, 8
 which vnprepared he ministred, and with the same ministred the poore
 mans death.

The lewd wretch cried out that hee had taken a great quantity of
 the purgation, more than he appointed, which was in a window in his 12
 chamber; much adoe was made, and he would iustifie before any
 learned man his deed; but trusting better to his heeles, than to hazard
 a hanging, hee gaue them that night the slip, and is not yet taken.

To be short, how euer ye differ in seuerall shiftes, yet agree you all 16
 in one manner of shifting: cunning is the cloake to hide your cog-
 ging: money the marke for which ye play the makeshiftes, nay the
 murtherers, not of the common enimie, but your owne country-men,
 than which what can be more barbarous? Common reason should 20
 perswade, that much reading and long practise in euery Art makes
 men expert. *Per Contrarium* I conclude, you that haue neither read
 nor practised, must needs be egregiously ignorant.

Assure your selues, if you refraine not, iustice will stand vppe, and 24
 so refraine yee, as there shall be nothing more noted than your
 ignorant practises and impudent courses. In my life I was your
 aduersary: in death I am your enimie. Beseeching the reuerend
 Colledge of learned Doctors and worshipfull company of experient 28
 Chirurgions to looke more straightly to your falsie deceites, and close
 haunts, that there may be sooner heard talke of such a rare obscure
 assurancer to worke what not wonders in Phisicke, or Chirurgirie, but
 he be rather lookt into or euer he begin, than suffred to begin, whereby 32
 any poore patient should suffer losse in triall of their blind skill: so
 shall your coufenages be as open as your Actes be odious.

Subscribed

Burcot.

36

This is somewhat like (thought I) if he had said any thing against coufoning toothe drawers, that from place to place wander with banners full of horfe teeth, to the imparing of Kindharts occupation; 4 but I perceiue maister Doctour was neuer a tooth drawer; if he had, I know he would haue toucht their deceiuings. Since he hath let them + passe, I greatly passe not: and yet in regard of the credit of my trade, I care not to haue a blow or two with them my selfe, before I looke 8 any further.

Sundry of them that so wander, haue not to do with the means Kindhart vseth, but forsooth by charmes they can at their pleasure fray away the payne; which Kindhart counts little better than witch 12 craft, if it could doe good, and so to some of them haue I affirmed it: But a proper slip-string, sometime a petty schole-maister, now a pelt- ing tooth charmer, hauing no reason to defend his obscure rules, quite put me to silence before a well learned audience, the one a cobler, the 16 other a carman, the last a collyer. These beeing poore men, had I for pittie often eased of their payne, yet was the remedy I vsde somewhat painefull; but not long since they are come acquainted with the charmer I told ye of; he, in charitable consideration of their greefe, 20 promised to ease them onely with writing, and after burning, a word or two. Trauelling to a Gentlemans not farre from London, I by the way chaunft to be cald to conferre with him at the same verye instant, where, reproouing his opinion, hee put me downe with such a 24 galliemaufrey of latine ends, that I was glad to make an end: Yet got I a copy of his charme, which I will fet downe that I may make it common.

A Charme.

28 F[i]rst, he must know your name, then your age, which in a little paper he sets downe: on the top are these words *In verbis, et in herbis, et in lapidibus*¹ sunt virtutes; vnderneath he writes in capitall letters *A AB ILLA, HVRS GIBELLA*, which he sweres is pure Chalde 32 and the names of three spirites that enter into the blood and cause rewmes, & so consequently the tootheach. This paper must be likewise three times blest, and at last with a little frankincense burned,

¹ 'lapidibus' is in Orig., not *lapidibus*.

which being thrice vsed, is of power to expell the spirites, purifie the bloud, and ease the paine, or else he lyes, for he hath practised it long, but shall approue it neuer.

Another fort, get hot wiers, and with them they burne out the 4
worme that so torments the greued: these fellowes are fit to visit
curst wiuies, and might by their practise doe a number of honest men
ease, if they would misse the tooth, and worme the tongue.

Others there are, that perswade the pained, to hold their mouths 8
open ouer a basin of water by the fire side, and to cast into the fire
a handfull of henbane seede, the which naturally hath in euery seede
a little worme; the feedes breaking in the fire, vse a kind of cracking,
and out of them, it is hard among so many, if no worme fly into the 12
water: which wormes the deceiuers affirme to haue fallen from the
teeth of the diseased. This rare secret is much vsed, and not smally
lyked. Sundry other could I set downe, practised by our banner-
bearers, but all is foppery; for this I find to be the only remedy for 16
the tooth paine, either to haue patience, or to pull them out.

Well, no more for mee, leaft I bee thought to speake too largely for
my selfe. I had thought to haue had a fling at the rat-catchers, who
with their banners displayed, beare no small sway: what I haue to 20
saye to them they shall not yet heare, because I hope they will take
warning by other mens harmes. Onely this I affirme, that as some
banner-bearers haue in their occupations much craft, the rat-catchers
is nothing else but craft. 24

But stay Kind-hart, if thou make so long a Chorus betweene euery
act, thy iests will be as stale as thy wit is weake. Therefore leauing
those vagabonds to repent their villanyes, Ile bid adieu to maister
Doctour, and see who is our next speaker. 28



Robert Greene to

Pierce Pennilesse.

4 **P**ierce, if thy Carrier had beene as kinde to me as I expected, I could haue dispatched long since my letters to thee: but it is here as in the world, *Donum à dando deriuatur*: where there is nothing to giue, there is nothing to be got. But hauing now found meanes to send to thee, I
8 will certifie thee a little of my disquiet after death, of which I thinke thou either hast not heard or wilt not conceiue.

Hauing with humble penitence besought pardon for my infinite finnes, and paid the due to death; euen in my graue was I scarce
12 layde, when Enuie (no fit companion for Art) spit out her poyson, to disturbe my rest. *Aduersus mortuos bellum suscipere, inhumanum est.* There is no glory gained by breaking a deade mans skull. *Pascitur in viuis liuor, post fata quiescit.* Yet it appeares contrary in some,
16 that inueighing against my workes, my pouertie, my life, my death, my burial, haue omitted nothing that may seeme malitious. For my Bookes, of what kind foeuer, I refer their commendation or dispraise to those that haue read them. Onely for my last labours affirming,
20 my intent was to reprove vice, and lay open such villanies, as had beene very necessary to be made knowne, wherof my *Blacke Booke*, if euer it see light, can sufficiently witness.

But for my pouertie, mee thinkes wisedom would haue brideled
24 that inuectiue; for *Cuius potest accidere quod cuiquam potest.* The beginning of my dispraisers is knowne; of their end they are not sure. For my life, it was to none of them at any time hurtful: for my death, it was r. pentant: my buriall like a Christians.

28 *Alas that men so hastily should run,
To write their own dispraise as they haue done.*

For my reuenge, it suffices, that euery halfe-eyd humanitian may account it, *Inſtar belluarum immaniſſimarum ſœuire in cadauer.* For the iniurie offered thee, I know I need not bring oyle to thy fire. And albeit I would diſſwade thee from more inuectiues againſt ſuch thy 4 aduerſaries (for peace is nowe all my plea) yet I know thou wilt returne anſwere, that ſince thou receiuedſt the firſt wrong, thou wilt not endure the laſt.

My quiet Ghoſt (vnquietly diſturbed) had once intended thus to 8 haue exclaimed.

Pierce, more witleſſe, than pennileſſe; more idle, than thine aduerſaries ill employde; what fooliſh innocence hath made thee (infant like) reſiſtleſſe to beare what euer iniurie Enuie can impoſe? 12

Once thou commendedſt immediate conceit, and gaueſt no great praife to excellent works of twelue yeres labour: now, in the blooming of thy hopes, thou ſuffereſt ſlander to nippe them ere they can bud: thereby approving thy ſelfe to be of all other moſt ſlacke, beeing 16 in thine owne cauſe ſo remiſſe.

Colour can there be none found to ſhadowe thy fainting; but the longer thou deſerſt, the more greefe thou bringſt to thy friends, and giueſt the greater head to thy enemies. 20

What canſt thou tell, if (as my ſelfe) thou ſhalt bee with death preuented: and then how can it be but thou dieſt diſgrac'd, ſeeing thou haſt made no reply to their twofold Edition of Inuectiues?

It may bee thou thinkſt they will deale well with thee in death, 24 and ſo thy ſhame in tollerating them will be ſhort: forge not to thy ſelf one ſuch conceit, but make me thy preſident, and remember this olde adage: *Leonem mortuum mordent Catuli.*

Awake (ſecure boy) reuenge thy wrongs, remember mine: thy 28 aduerſaries began the abuſe, they continue it: if thou ſuffer it, let thy life be ſhort in ſilence and obſcuritie, and thy death haſtie, hated, and miſerable.

All this had I intended to write, but now I wil not giue way to 32 wrath, but returne it vnto the earth from whence I tooke it: for with happie ſoules it hath no harbour.

Robert Greene.

Had not my name beene *Kind-hart*, I would haue fborne this
had beene sent to my selfe; for in my life I was not more pen-
nileffe than at that instant. But remembering the Author
4 of the *Supplication*, I laid it aside till I had
leyfure to seeke him: and taking
vp the next, I found
written,



To all maligners of honest mirth,

Turleton wisheth continuall melancholy.

Now Maisters, what say you to a merrie knaue, that for this two years day hath not beene talkt of? Wil you giue him leaue, if he can, to make ye laugh? What, all a mort? No merry countenance? Nay, then I see hypocrisie hath the vpper hand, and her spirit raignes in this profitable generation. Sith it is thus, Ile be a time-pleaser. Fie vppon following plaies, the expence is wondrous; vpon players speeches, their wordes are full of wyles; vppon their gestures, that are altogether wanton. Is it not lamentable, that a man should spende his two pence on them in an after-noone, heare couetousnes amongst them daily quipt at, being one of the commonest occupations in the country; and in liuely gesture see trecherie set out, with which euery man now adaies vseth to intrap his brother. Byr lady, this would be lookt into: if these be the frutes of playing, tis time the practifers were expeld.

Expeld (quoth you); that hath been pretily performd, to the no smal profit of the Bouling-allyes in Bedlam and other places, that were wont in the after-noonnes to be left empty, by the recourse of good fellows vnto that vnprofitable recreation of Stage-playing.

And it were not much amisse, would they ioine with the Dicing houses to make sute againe for their longer restraint, though the sicknesse cease. Is not this well faide (my maisters) of an olde buttond cappe, that hath most part of his life liu'd vppon that against which hee inueighs: Yes, and worthily.

But I haue more to say than this; Is it not greate shame, that the

houses of retaylers neare the Townes end, should be by their continuance impouerished : Alas good hearts, they pay great rentes ; and pittie it is but they be prouided for. While Playes are vsde, halfe the
 4 day is by most youthes that haue libertie spent vpon them, or at least the greatest company drawne to the places where they frequent. If they were suppressed, the flocke of yoong people would bee equally parted. But now the greatest trade is brought into one street. Is it
 8 not as faire a way to *Myle-end* by *White-chappell*, as by *Shorditch* to *Hackney* ? the Sunne shineth as clearly in the one place, as in the other ; the shades are of a like pleasure : onely this is the fault, that by ouermuch heat sometime they are in both places infectious.

12 As well in this as other things there is great abuse : for in euery house where the venerian virgins are resident, hospitalitie is quite exiled, such fines, such taxes, such tribute, such customs, as (poore
 foules) after seuen yeares seruice in that vnhalloved order, they are
 16 faine to leaue their futes for offerings to the olde *Lenos* that are shrine-keepers, and themselues (when they begin to break) are faine to seeke harbour in an Hospital : which chaunceth not (as sometime is thought) to one amongst twentie, but hardly one amongst a hundred
 20 haue better ending. And therefore seeing they liue so hardly, its pitie Players should hinder their takings a peny.

I marry (saies *Baudeamus* my quondam Host) well, faire olde Dicke, that worde was well plac'd : for thou knowst our rentes are so
 24 vreasonable, that except wee cut and shaue, and poule, and prig, we must return *Non est inuentus* at the quarter day.

For is not this pittifull ? I am a man now as other men be, and haue liu'd in some shire of England, till all the Country was wearie
 28 of mee. I come vp to London, and fall to be some Tapster, Hostler, or Chamberlaine in an Inne : Well, I get mee a wife, with her a little money : when we are married, seeke a house we must ; no other occupation haue I but to be an Ale-draper ; the Landlord wil haue fortie
 32 pound fine, and twenty marke a yeare ; I and mine must not lie in the street : he knows by honest courtes I can neuer paye the Rent. What should I say ? somewhat must be done, rent must be paid, duties discharged, or we vndone. To bee short, what must be shall be : indeede
 36 sometimes I haue my Landlordes countenance before a Iustice, to cast

a cloake ouer ill-rule, or els hee might seeke fuch another tenant to pay his rent fo truly.

Quaintly concluded (*Peter Pandar*) fomewhat yee muft bee, and a bawd ye will bee. I, by my troth fir, why not I as well as my neighbors, fince theres no remedy. And you fir, find fault with plaies. Out vpon them, they fpoile our trade, as you your felfe haue proued. Befide, they open our croffe-biting, our conny-catching, our traines, our traps, our gins, our fnares, our fubtilties: for no fooner haue we 8 a tricke of decept, but they make it common, finging Iigs, and making ieafts of vs, that euerie boy can point out our houfes as they paffe by.

Whither now *Tarlton*? this is extempore, out of time, tune, and 12 temper. It may be well faid to me:

Stulte, quid hæc faris, &c.

Rusticus ipse, tuis malus es, tibi pessimus ipfi.

Thy felfe once a Player, and againft Players: nay, turne out the 16 right fide of thy ruffet coate, and lette the world know thy meaning. Why thus I meane, for now I fpeake in fobernes.

Euery thing hath in it felfe his vertue and his vice: from one felfe flower the Bee and Spider fucke honny and poyfon. In plaies it fares 20 as in bookes, vice cannot be reprov'd, except it be difcouered: neither is it in any play difcouered, but there followes in the fame an example of the punifhment: now he that at a play will be delighted in the one, and not warned by the other, is like him that reads in a 24 booke the defcription of finne, and will not looke ouer the leafe for the reward.

Mirth in feafonable time taken, is not forbidden by the auftereft 28 Sapients.

But indeede there is a time of mirth, and a time of mourning. Which time hauing been by the Magiftrats wifely obferued, as well for the fuppreffing of Playes, as other pleasures: fo likewise a time may come, when honeft recreation fhall haue his former libertie. 32

And lette *Tarleton* intreate the yoong people of the Cittie, either to abftaine altogether from playes, or at their comming thither to vfe themfelues after a more quiet order.

In a place so ciuill as this Cittie is esteemed, it is more than barbarously rude, to see the shamefull disorder and routes that sometime in such publike meetings are vsed.

- 4 The beginners are neither gentlemen, nor citizens, nor any of both their seruants, but some lewd mates that long for innouation; & when they see aduantage, that either Seruingmen or Apprentifes are most in number, they will be of either side, though indeed they are of
8 no side, but men beside all honestie, willing to make boote of cloakes, hats, purfes, or what euer they can lay holde on in a hurley burley. These are the common causers of discord in publike places. If otherwise it happen (as it seldome doth) that any quarrell be betweene man
12 and man, it is far from manhood to make so publike a place their field to fight in: no men will doe it, but cowardes that would faine be parted, or haue hope to haue manie partakers.

- Nowe to you that maligne our moderate merriments, and thinke
16 there is no felicitie but in exceffiue possession of wealth: with you I would ende in a song, yea an Extempore song on this Theame, *Ne quid nimis necessarium*: but I am now hoarse, and troubled with my Taber and Pipe: beside, what pleasure brings musicke to the miserable.
20 Therefore letting songes passe, I tell them in sadnes, how euer Playes are not altogether to be commended: yet some of them do more hurt in a day, than all the Players (by exercizing theyr profession) in an age. Faults there are in the professors as other men, this the greatest,
24 that diuers of them beeing publike in euerie ones eye, and talkt of in euery vulgar mans mouth, see not how they are seene into, especially for their contempt, which makes them among most men most contemptible.

- 28 Of them I will say no more: of the profession, so much hath *Pierce Pennileffe* (as I heare say) spoken, that for mee there is not any thing to speake. So wishing the chearefull, pleasaunce endlesse; and the wilfull fullen, sorrow till they surfet; with a turne on the toe I
32 take my leaue.

Richard Tarleton.

When I had done with this, one thing I mislikte, that *Tarleton* floode no longer on that point of Landlords: For lamentable it is (in

Kind-harts opinion) to note their vureasonable exaction. I my selfe knewe a Landlord, that beginning to enlarge a little Tenement, was according to statute prohibited: hee made humble suite that the worke might go forward; for, good man, he meant not to make 4 thereby any benefite, but euen in charitie he would turne it into an Almes-houfe. This godly motion was liked, and he allowed to goe forward with his building. The worke ended, in all the Country there could not poore bee found worthy, or at least able, to enter into 8 the same.

To be short, it was turned into a Tauerne, and with rent and fine in few monthes turnd the Tenant out of doores. Yet it hath benee saide, the poore man did what hee might, *Cum vino & venere*, to 12 continue his state: but the Landlord had made such a Dent in his stocke, that with all the wit in his head it would not bee stopt. I befrew the Card-makers, that clapt not a gowne about the Knaue of Hartes, & put him on a hat for a bonnet ouer his night-cappe, then 16 had not after Age taken care for the Image of this excellent Almes-houfe builder, but in euerie Ale-houfe should haue benee referued his monument, till *Macke, Maw, Ruffe, Noddy, and Trumpe*, had benee no more vsde, than his charitie is felt. 20

Pitie it is such Wolues are not shakte out of sheeps cloathing. Elder times detested such extremitie: the Gospels liberty (howsoeuer some Libertines abuse it) giues no such license: by their auarice Religion is slandered, lewdnes is bolstered, the suburbs of the Citie are 24 in many places no other but darke dennes for adulterers, theeues, murderers, and euerie mischiefe worker: daily experience before the Magistrates confirms this for truth.

I would the hart of the Cittie were whole, for both within and 28 without, extreame crueltie causeth much beggerie. *Victa iacet pietas*, and with pietie pittie. Selfe loue hath exiled charitie: and as among beastes the Lyon hunteth the Wolfe, the Wolfe deuoureth the Goate, and the Goate feedeth on mountaine hearbs: so among men, the 32 great oppresse the meaner, they againe the meanest: for whom hard fare, colde lodging, thinne clothes, and fore labour is onely allotted.

To see how soone the world is changd: In my time I remember two men, the one a Diuine, the other a Cittizen: it was their vsde, at 36

the time they should quarterly receiue their duties (for the first was well beneficed, the later a great Landlord) when they came to anie poore creature, whome sicknesse had hindered, or mischaunce im-
 4 paired, or many children kept lowe : they would not onely forgieue what they should receiue, but giue bountifully for the releefe of their present necessitie.

The olde Prouerbe is verified, *Seldome comes the better* : and they
 8 are posselt : the poore of that comfort disposselt.

Some Landlords hauing turnd an old Brue-houfe, Bake-houfe, or Dye-houfe, into an Alley of tenements, will either themselues, or some at their appointment, keepe tipling in the fore-houfe (as they call
 12 it) and their poore tenantes must bee inioinde to fetch bread, drinke, wood, cole, and such other necessaries, in no other place : and there till the weekes ende they may haue any thing of trust, prouided they lay to pawne their holiday apparell : nay, my Land-lady will not
 16 onely doe them that good turne, but if they want money, she will on munday lend them likewise vpon a pawne eleuen pence, and in meere pittie askes at the weekes end not a penny more than twelue pence.

20 O charitable loue, happy tenants of so kinde a Landlady : I warrant ye this Ufurie is within the Statute, it is not aboue fiew hundred for the loane of a hundred by the yeare.

Neyther will they doe this good to their tenantes alone, but they
 24 will deale with their husbandes, that for a little roome with a smoakie chimney (or perchance none, because smoake is noysome) they shall pay at the least but fortie shillings yeerly.

Fie vpon fines, thats the vndooing of poore people : weele take
 28 none (say these good creatures) marry for the key wee must haue confideration, that is, some Angell in hand : for verely the last tenant made vs change the locke : neither thinke we deale hardly, for it stands in a good place, quite out of company, where handicraft men
 32 may haue leysure to get their liuing, if they knew on what to set themselues a worke.

Now for all this kindnesse, the Land-lord scarce asketh of the tenant thanks (though hee deserue it well), for (as I faide) his Wife
 36 is all the dealer : so plaies the Parson (the person I should say, I

would bee loath to be mistaken) that I tolde yee before builded the Almes-house. The care of rentes is committed to his Wife, he is no man of this world, but as one metamorphizd. from a Saint to a Deuill. 4

How now *Kindhart*? shall we neuer haue done with these Land-lordes? It seemes well thou hast as little land as witte: for while thou liuest they wil not mend, and therefore its as good to make an ende, as waste winde. Well, all this 8
 was of good will to helpe *Tarleton* out
 with his tale. Now let me see what
 note *Cuckoe* sings, for tis his
 lucke to be laft. 12





William Cuckoe to all close

Iuglers wisheth the discouery of their crafts,
and punishment for their knaueries.

4 **R**oome for a craftie knaue, cries *William Cuckoe*. Knaue,
nay, it will neare hande beare an action: Bones a mee,
my trickes are stale, and all my old companions turnd
into Ciuill sutes. I perceiue the worlde is all honestie,
8 if it be no other than it lookes. Let me see, if I can see: beleeuue mee
theres nothing but iugling in euery corner; for euery man hath
learnd the mysterie of casting mysts; & though they vse not our olde
+ tearms of hey-passe, re-passe, and come aloft: yet they can by-passe
12 compasse, and bring vnder one another as cunningly and commonly,
as euer poore *Cuckoe* coulde command his Iacke in a Boxe.

Yet my maisters, though you robde me of my trade, to giue recom-
pence, after death I haue borrowed a tongue a little to touch their
16 tricks.

And now fir, to you that was wont like a Subfister in a gown of
rugge rent on the left shoulder, to fit finging the Counter-tenor by
the Cage in Southwarke: me thinks ye should not looke so coyly on
20 olde Cuckoe. What man, it is not your signe of the Ape and the
Urinall can carry away our olde acquaintance?

I trust yee remember your iugling at *Newington* with a Christall
stone, your knaueries in the wood by *Wansteed*, the wondrous treasure
24 you would discouer in the Ile of *Wight*, al your villanies about that
peece of seruice, as perfect[]y known to some of my friends yet
liuing as their Pater nofter, who curse the time you euer came in
their Creed.

28 But I perceiue you fare as the Fox, the more band, the better hap.

I wonder what became of your familiar, I meane no Deuill, man ; but a man Deuil : and yet I need not wonder, for since my descending to vnder earth, I heard say he was hangd for his knauerie, as you in good time may be, *Amen*. Amend I should say, but I thinke yee 4 meane it not : the matter is not great, for (thanks be to God) how euer you mend in manners, the world is wel amended with your man and you.

I pray ye was that hee which was your instrument in *Notingham- 8* *shire*, to make your name so famous for finding things lost? It may be, you forgot that one fetch among many : and leaft it should bee out of your heade, Ile helpe to beate it into your braines.

YOur Maship vpon a horse whose hire is not paid for, with your 12
Page at your stirrop, like a *Castilian Cavalier*, lighted pennileffe at a pretie Inne, where that day sate certain Iustices in Commission. Your high hart, carelesse of your present neede, would needes for your selfe share out one of the fairest chambers. Your Page must 16 be purueyer for your diet, who in the kitchin found nothing for your liking. Beefe was grosse, veale flashy, mutton sulfome, rabbets, hens, & capons, common. Wild foule for Will foole, or he will fast. 20

Well, at your will ye shall be furnisht. But now a Iugling tricked to pay the shot.

My Impe your man, while mistriffe, men, and maids were busied about prouision for the Iustices that sate, slips into a priuate parlour, 24 wherein stood good store of plate, and conueying a massy fault vnder his Capouch, little lesse woorth than twentie marke, got secretly to the back-side, and cast it into a filthie pond : which done, he acquaints your knaueship with the deed. 28

By then your diet was drest, the fault was mist, the good Wife cryde out, the maydes were ready to runne madde.

Your man, (making the matter strange) inquired the cause : which when they tolde. O (quoth hee) that my maister would deale in the 32 matter, I am sure he can do as much as any in the world.

Well, to you they come pitifully complaining ; when very wrathfully (your choler rising) you demaund reason why they should thinke

ye be able to deale in such cafes. Your kind nature (bent alwayes to lenitie) yeelded, at the laft to their importuning: onely wifht them to ftay till the nexte day, for that you would not deale while the
4 Iuftices were in the houfe.

They muft do as your difcretion appoints: next day, calling the good-man and wife to your bed-fide, ye tell them the falte was ftolne by one of their familiars, whom he had forced by Art to bring it
8 backe againe to the houfe, and in fuch a pond to caft it, becaufe he would not haue the partie knowne, for feare of trouble.

As you direct them, they fearch and find: then comes your name in rare admiration; the Hofft giues you foure Angels for a reward, the
12 Hofteffe two French crowns: the maydes are double diligent to doe you feruice, that they may learne their fortunes; the whole towne talks of the cunning man, that indeed had onely connycatcht his Hofft.

16 If that flip-fting bee ftill in your feruice, I aduife you make much of him, for by that tricke he prou'd himfelfe a toward youth, neceffary for fuch a maifter. This iugling paffes *Cuckoes* play. Well, I aduife you play leaft in fight in London, for I haue fette fome to
20 watch for your comming, that will iuftifie all this and more of your fhifting life.

Returne to your olde craft and play the Pinner: although it be a poore life, it is an honeft life: your fallacies will one day faile ye.

24 There is another Iugler, that beeing well skild in the Iewes Trumpe, takes vpon him to bee a dealer in Muficke: efpeciall good at mending Infruments: he iugled away more infrumentes of late, than his bodie (being taken) will euer be able to make good.

28 Tut, thats but a plaine tricke: How fay ye by fome Iuglers that can ferue writs without any original, and make poore men dwelling farre off, compound with them for they knowe not what? I tell you there bee fuch, that by that trick can make a vacation time quicker
32 to them than a Terme: who troubling threefcore or fourefcore men without caufe, get of fome a crowne, of others a noble, of diuers a pound, befide the ordinarie coftes of the writ, to put off their appearance, when no fuch thing was toward.

36 Fie vpon thefe Iuglers, they make the lawes of the Realme be ill

spoken of, and are cause that plaine people thinke all Lawyers like them : as appears by a poore old man by chance comming into one of the worshipful Innes of the Court, where sundry Ancients and Students both honorable and worshipfull fate at supper: the poore 4 man admiring their comely order and reuerent demeanor, demanded of a stander by, what they were. Gentlemen (said hee) of the Innes of Court. Lord blesse hem (quoth plaine *Coridon*) beene they of Queens Court? No, said the other, but of the Innes of Court. 8 What doon they, quoth the Countrey man; wotten yee? The other answered, that they were all Lawyers, and Students of the Lawe. Now, well a neere cries plaine Simplicitie: wee han but one Lawyer with vs, and hee spoyles all the Parish: but heere been now to marre 12 the whole shire. His simplenes was by the hearers well taken, and the Lawiers name inquired, who prou'd no other but one of these pettifogging Iuglers, that, hauing scraped vp a few common places, and by long Solliciterfhip got in to be an odd Attorney, was not long 16 since disgraded of his place by pitching ouer the Barre, yet promoted to looke out of a wodden window, cut after the Doue hole fashion, with a paper on his futtle pate, containing the iugling before shewed. So fortune it to his fellowes, and let their misery come *cito pede*. 20 Law is in it selfe good, the true Professors to be highly esteemd. But as in Diuinity it sometime fares that Schismatikes, Heretikes, and such like, make Scripture a cloake for their detested errors, and by their practises seeke to make the reuerend Diuines contemptible; so 24 a sort of Connycatchers (as I may call them) that haue gathered vp the gleanings of the Law, onely expert to begin controuerfies, and vtterly ignorant of their end, perfwade the simple that if they will follow their rules, thus and thus, it shall chance to their speedy quiet- 28 ing, and that Attorneys, Counsellers and Serieants, are too costly to bee dealt with simply, but by their mediation, who are able to speak when Counsell failes, and giue more ease in an houre, than the best Benchers in a yeare; when, God wot, they doo no more good than a³² Drone in a Hiue. These Iuglers are too cunning for *Cuckoe*, and in the end will proue too crafty for themselues. Other Iuglers there bee, that hauing fauour from Authority to seeke some thing to themselves beneficiall, and to the Common-wealth not preiudiciall. vnder 36

colour of orderly dealing, haue hookt into their hands the whole liuing to a number poore men belonging. These, when they were complaind on, immediately tooke an honest course, and promise large
 4 reliefe yeerely to them they wrong: But euery promise is either broken, or kept, & so it fares with them: I protest if their Iugling were set downe, it would make a pretty volume: but I wil let them passe, because there is hope they will remember themselues. To set
 8 downe the Iugling in Trades, the crafty tricks of buyers and sellers, the swearing of the one, the lying of the other, were but to tell the worlde that which they well knowe, and therefore I will likewise ouerslip that. There is an occupation of no long standing about
 12 London called Broking or brogging, whether ye will; in which there is pretty Iugling, especially to blind Law, and bolster Ufury: if any man be forst to bring them a pawne, they will take no interest, not past twelue pence a pound for the month; marry, they must haue a
 16 goat for a monthly bill: which is a bill of sale from month to month; so that no aduantage can be taken for the Ufurie. I heare say its well multiplied since I died; but I beshrewe them, for in my life many a time haue I borrowed a shilling on my Pipes, and paid a
 20 goat for the bill, when I haue fetcht out my pawne in a day.

This Iugling exceeds *Cuckoes* gettings, and sundry times turnd poore *William* to his shifts. Indeede I deny not, but in their kind some of them deale well, and wil preferue a mans goods safe, if he
 24 keep any reasonable time: these are not so blameable, as they that make immediate sale. If euer I haue oportunity to write into the world againe, I will learne who abuse it most, and who vse it best, and set ye downe their dwelling places.

28 Now I will draw to an end, concluding with a Master Iugler, that he may be well knowne if he be got into any obscure corner of the COUNTRY. This Shifter forsooth carried no lesse countenance than a Gentlemans abilitie, with his two men in blue coates, that serued for
 32 shares, not wages. Hee being properly seated in a Shire of this Realme, and by the report of his men bruted for a cunning man, grew into credit by this practise.

His house beeing in a Village through which was no thorough
 36 Fare, his men, and sometime his Maftershippe in their company, at

midnight woulde goe into their neighbours feuerall grounds, being farre distant from their dwelling houfes, and oftentimes driue from thence Horfes, Mares, Oxen, Kine, Calues, or Sheepe, what euer came next to hande, a mile perchaunce or more out of the place 4 wherein they were left.

Home would they return, and leaue the cattel fraying: In the morning, sometime the milke-maids misse their Kine, another day the Plough-hinds their Oxen, their Horfes another time, somewhat of 8 some woorth once a weeke lightly. Whither can these poore people go but to the wife mans worship? Perchaunce in a morning two or three come to complaine and seeke remedie, who, welcommed by one of his men, are feuerally demaunded of their losses. If one come for 12 sheepe, another for other cattell, they are all at first tolde, that his Maisterhip is a sleepe, and, till hee himselfe call, they dare not trouble him.

But very kindly he takes them into the hall, and when his worship 16 first, promises them they shall speake with him at liberty. Now first behind a curtaine in the hall stands a shelve garnisht with bookes, to which my mate goes vnder to take one downe. And as he takes it down, pulleth certaine strings which are fastened to feuerall small 20 bells in his Maisters chamber; and as the bells strike, hee knowes what cattell his neighbors come to seeke, one bell being for Oxen, another for kine, another for swine, &c. A while after he stamps, and makes a noyse aboue; the seruingman intreats the Suters to go vp, and 24 hee hearing them comming, himselfe kindly opens them the dore, and ere euer they speake, salutes them, protesting for their losse great forrowe, as if hee knew their griefes by reuelation, comforts them with hope of recouery, and such like wordes. They cry out, Iesu 28 bleffe your Mastership, what a gift haue you to tel our mindes, and neuer heares vs speake. I, neighbors, saith he, ye may thanke God: I trust I am come among ye to doe ye all good. Then knowing which way they were driuen, hee bids them goe either East-ward, or South- 32 ward to seeke neere such an Oake or rowe of Elmes, or water, or such like marke neere the place where the Cattell were left; and hee assures them that by his skill the theeues had no power to carry them farther than that place. They runne and seek their cattle, which 36

when they finde, O admirable wife man, the price of a Cow we will not sticke with him for; happy is the shire where such a one dwels. Thus doe the pore confoned people proclaime, and so our shifter is
 4 sought too far and neere. I thinke this be iugling in the highest degree: if it be not, *Cuckoe* is out of his compaffe. Well, the world is full of holes, and more shiftes were neuer practisde. But this is *Cuckoes* counsell, that yee leaue in time, lest being conuicted like my
 8 Hoast of the Anchor, ye pine your selues in prison to saue your eares from the Pillory: an end too good for Iugling shifters, and cofening periurers.

William Cuckoe.

12 Ha firra, I am glad we are at an end: *Kindhart* was neuer in his life so weary of reading. Beshrew them for me, they haue wakened me from a good sleepe, and wried me almost out of my wits. Here hath beene a coile indeede, with lewd song fingers, drench giuers,
 16 detracters, players, oppreffors, reentraifers, bawdes, brothel-houfes, shifters, and Iuglers. But fith they haue all done, turne ouer the leafe and heare how merrily *Kindhart* will conclude.



Englandes Mourning Garment:

Worne here by plaine Shepherdes;

in memorie of their sacred Mistresse,

ELIZABETH, Queene of Vertue while shee
liued, and Theame of Sorrow,
being dead.

To which is added the true manner of her
Emperiall Funerall.

After which foloweth the Shepherds Spring-Song,
for entertainement of King IAMES our
most potent Soueraigne.

Dedicated to all that loued the deceased Queene,
and honor the liuing King.

Non Verbis sed Virtute.



¶Printed at London by V.S. for Thomas Millington, and are
to be sold at his shop vnder saint Peters Church in Cornhil.



To all true Louers of the right grati-
ous Queene Elizabeth, in her life; being

vndoubtedly those faithful Subiects that now ho-
nor and affect our most potent Lord, King 4
James, after her death.

MY Epistle to you, is like the little Towne that the
Cynicke would haue perfwaded the Citizens was
ready to runne out at the great gates, being 8
scarce so long as the Title. In a word, the negligence of
many better able, hath made mee bolde to write a small
Epitomie, touching the abundant Vertues of Elizabeth our
late sacred Misstris. Intreating of her Princely birth, chaste 12
life, royall gouvernement, and happie death; being a Lady
borne, liuing, raigning, dying, all for Englandes good. The
manner is handled betweene Shepheardes, the forme of speach
like the persons, rude: Affection exceedeth Eloquence, and I 16
haue not shewne much Arte; but exprest the dutie of a louing
heart: Shead some teares in reading our Shepheard's forrow;
and in that true pafsion, let your loue to our royall Lord be

shewne: who hateth hypocrites, as iust men Hell. Farewell
all of you that giue the dead Queene a sad Farewell, and the
liuing King a glad Welcome; the rest are Time-pleasers, and
4 I write not to them.

Fœlicem fuisse infaustum.





Englands Mourning Garment.

*Wrought by plaine Shepherdes, for the
death of that most excellent Empresse Elizabeth, 4
Queene of Vertue, while she liued; and Theame
of Sorrow, being dead.*

THE NOT. COLLIN.

Thenot.

8



Ollin, thou look'ft as lagging as the day
When the Sun fetting toward his westerne bed,
Shews, that like him, all glory must decay,
And frolicke life with murkie clouds o're-fpred,

12

Shall leaue all earthly beautie mongft the dead;
Such is the habite of thy new. aray:
Why art thou not preparte to welcome Maie,
In whose cleere Moone thy yonglings shall be fed,
With nights sweetes dewes, and open flowers of day?

16

Collin.

I anfwere thee with woe and welaway,
I am in fable clad, fith she cannot be had
That me and mine did glad;

20

there's all I'le say.

Thenot.

Well spoken Swaine, let me thy sorrowe ken,
Rich foule, though wrong'd by idle Antike men,
And driuen by falshood to a cloudy den,
Tell me thy grieffe.

24

Collin.

O it is past reliefe ; and which is worst of worst,
Bayards and beafts accurst, with grossest flattery nurst :
4 Haue sung her sacred name, and prais'd her to their shame,
Who was our last and first.

Thenot.

Deere *Collin*, doe not checke the humblest song,
8 The will is euer maister of the worke,
Those that can sing, haue done all Shepherds wrong,
Like lozels in their cotages to lurke :
The aire's the aire, though it be thicke and murke :
12 If they to whom true Pastoralls belong,
In needefull layes, vse neither pipe nor tong,
Shall none the vertuous raise ?

Collin.

16 Yes, those that merit Bayes,
Though teares refraine their layes,
Some weeping houres or dayes
will finde a time
20 To honor Honor stil : not with a rural quill,
But with the soule of skil,
to bleffe their rime.
Aye me ! why should I dote
on rimes, on songs, or note,
24 Confusion can best quote,
sacred *Elizæes* losse,
Whose praise doth grace al verse,
28 that shal the same reherse,
No gold neede decke her herse ;
to her al gold is drosse.

With that, *Collin* in discontent, brake his pipe, and in that passion,
32 as if his heart had beene like his Pipe, parted each piece from the
other, hee fel without sence on the earth, not then insensible of his
forrow ; for it yielded, wept and groaned at once with his fal, his
weepings and his sighs. Poore *Th.* showted for help ; at whose cal

came some Nymphs full of sorrow for their Soueraigne; and no whit amazed to see him lie as dead, their hearts were so dead, with thinking of that which had astonied his. But yet, as gathering of companies draw more & more to wonder, so prooued it among the shepheards, 4 that left none but their cures to attend their flockes, themselves flocking about *Thenot & Collin*, who now recouered from his trance, and al asking the reason of this grieffe, with teares abounding in his eyes, that likewise drew more abundantly from theirs, he distractedly 8 answered,

*Illum nec enim reprehendere fas est,
Qui fleat hanc, cuius fregerunt flamina parcaë,
Solutus honor sequitur mortales ille misellos.*

12

And therewithall making a signe for the Shepherdes and Nymphes to sit downe, hee tolde them, they had lost that sacred Nymph, that careful Shepheardeffe *ELIZA*; but if it pleased them to lend attention, he would repeate something of her, worth memorie, that should liue 16 in despite of death: whereupon a still silence seized them all, fauing onely now and then, by sighing they exprest their hearts sorrow: and *Collin* thus beganne.

Seeing Honor onely foloweth mortals, and the works of the 20 vertuous die not with their deaths, and yet those workes neuertheless with the honors and rites due to the departed, might be much blemished, if there were no gratitude in their successors: let vs poore Rurals (though no other wayes able to erect Statues for our late 24 dread Soueraigne, worthy all memory,) among our selues repeate part of her excellent Graces, and our benefite obtained by her Government: for, to reckon all, were *Opus infinitum*, a labour without end.

She was the vndoubted issue of two royall princes, *Henry of Lan 28 caster* and *Elizabeth of Yorke*. In whose vnion the quiet of vs poore Swaines began: for till that blessed mariage, *England* was a shambles of slaughtered men: so violent was the blood of ambition, so potent the factions, and so implacable their heads; whose eyes were neuer 32 cleared till they were washt in blood, euen in the deare blood of their Obiects hearts. This King, Grandfather to our late Queene, was the

first Brittiſh King, that many a hundred yeares before wore the Emperiall Diademe of *England, France* and *Ireland*: in him began the name of *Tewther*, deſcended from the ancient Brittiſh Kings, to flouriſh ;
 4 the iſſue male of royal *Plantagenet* ending in his beginning: his wife, Grandmother to our late *Elizabeth*, being the laſt *Plantagenet*, whoſe Temples were here circled with a ſphere of golde. Which King and Queene liued and loved, and now lie intoombed in that
 8 moſt famous Chappell, built at his Kingly charge in the Abbey of *Weſtminſter*: King *Henry*, dying in a good age, left *England* rich, beautifull, and full of peace ; and ſo bleſſt with his iſſue, after royally matcht to *Scotland & France*, beſides his vndoubted heire King *Henry*
 12 of famous memory the eight ; that no Kingdome in the earth more flouriſhed.

His ſonne, the Father of our *Elizabeth*, was to his Enemies dreadfull, to his friends gracious, vnder whoſe Enſigne the Emperour himſelfe
 16 ſeru'd: ſo potent a Prince He was: beſides, ſo liberal and bounteous, that he ſeemed like the Sunne in his Meridian, to ſhowre downe gold round about the Horizon: But hee dide too, and left vs three Princely hopes ; all which haue ſeuerally ſucceeded other, royally
 20 maintaining the right of *England*, and reſiſted all forraine wrong.

For King *Edward* our late Soueraignes Brother, though he died yong in yeares, left inſtance hee was no Infant in vertues ; his learning, towardnes and zeale, was thought fitter for the ſocietie of Angels
 24 than men, with whome no doubt his ſpirit liues eternally.

Such aſſurance haue we of the happineſſe of that royall gracious and worthy Ladie *Mary* his eldeſt ſiſter: who in her death expreſſt the care of her Kingdomes, ſo much lamenting one Townes loſſe,
 28 that ſhee told her attendant Ladies, if they would rippe her heart when ſhe was dead, they ſhould finde *Callice* written in it. O *Thenot*, with all you other Nymphs and Swaines, learne by this worthe Queene, the care of Soueraignes, how heart-ficke they are for their
 32 ſubiecs loſſe ; and thinke what felicitie we poore wormes liue in, that haue ſuch royall Patrons, who carke for our peace, that we may quietly eate the bread of our owne labor, tend our flockes in ſafety, asking of vs nothing but feare and duety, which humanity allows,
 36 and heauen commands.

With this, *Thenot* interrupted *Collin*, telling him, there were a number of true shepheards misliked that Princes life, and ioyed greatly at her death: withall, beginning to shew some reasons, but *Collin* quickly interrupted him in these words: 4

*Peace, Thenot, peace, Princes are sacred things ;
It fits not Swaines to thinke amisse of Kings.*

For, saith he, the faults of Rulers (if any be faultie) are to be reprehended by them that can amend them; and seeing none is 8
superiour to a King but God, to him alone referre their actions. And where thou termest them true shepheards that so envied that Ladies gouvernement, thou art deceiued, they are still as they then were, proud phanatike spirited counterfaites, expert in nothing but 12
ignorance, such as hate all rule: for who resisteth correction more than fooles, though they deserue it most? Beleeue me, *Thenot*, and all you well affected Swaines, there is no greater marke for a true shepheard to be knowne by, than Humilitie, which, God he knowes, those mad men 16
most want: too much experience haue we of their threed-bare pride, who bite the dead, as liuing cures may lions: not contented with their scandals of that Royall Lady, our late Soueraignes Sisters, but they haue troubled the cleare springs of our Mistresse *Elizabeths* 20
blesed gouvernement: nay, my selfe haue seene & heard with glowing eares, some of them, euen in the fields of *Calydon*, when his Excellence that is now our emperiall Shepheard, was onely Lord of their foldes, speake of his Maiestie more audaciously and malapertly, than any of vs would 24
doe of the meanest officer. For as I saide euen now, if Rulers chance to slip, it is most vnufferable, that euery impudent rayler should with the breath of his mouth stirre the chaffe multitude, whose eares itch for nouelties, whose mindes are as their numbers, diuerse: not able to 28
iudge themselues, much lesse their soueraignes. But they ought, if they be true Pastors, to folow the great *Pan*, the Father of al good shepheards, Christ, who teacheth euery of his Swaines to tell his brother priuately of his fault, and againe, and againe,—by that glorious 32
number, three, including numbers numberlesse,—before it be told the Church. If then they must, being true shepheards, deale so with

their brethren, how much more ought their folowers do to their Soueraigns, being Kings and Queenes? And not in the place where sacred and morall manners should be taught, contrarily to teach the
 4 rude to be more vnmanly, instructing euery Punie to compare with the most reuerend Prelate, and by that example to haue euery Cobler account himfelfe a King.

Oh, saide *Thenot*, *Collin*, there are some would il thinke of you,
 8 should they heare you thus talke, for they reprove all out of zeale, and must spare none.

Peace to thy thoughts, *Thenot*, answered *Collin*, I know thou knowest there is a zeale that is not with knowledge acquainted; but
 12 let them and their madde zeale passe; let vs forget their railings against Princes: And beginne with her beginning, after her Royall Sisters ending, who departing from this earthly kingdome the seauen-
 16 teenth of Nouember in the yeare of our Lord 1558. immediately there upon, *Elizabeth*, the hand maide to the Lord of Heauen, and Empresse of all Maides, Mothers, youth and men then liuing in this English Earth, was proclaimed Queene with generall applause; being much
 20 pittied, for that busie slander and respectlesse enuy had not long before brought her into the disfauour of her royall Sister *Mary*, whom we last remembred: In the continuance of whose displeasure, stil stil made
 24 greater by some great Enemies, how she scap't, needs no repeating, being so wel knowne. Preserued shee was from the violence of death; her blood was precious in the fight of G O D, as is the blood of al his
 28 Saints; it was too deare to be powred out like water on the greedy earth; she liued, and wee haue liued vnder her, fortie and odde yeres, so wonderfully blest, that all Nations haue wondred at their owne
 32 vndoubted Lord, immediately after her death. But lest we end ere we begin, I wil returne to her: who being seated in the Throne of Maiestie, adorned with al the vertues diuine and moral, appeared to vs like a goodly Pallace where the Graces kept their feuerall man-
 36 sions.

First, faith abundantly shone in her, then yong, and lost not her brightnesse in her age, for she beleued in her Redeemer, her trust was in the King of Kings, who preferred her, as the Apple of his eye, from all treacherous attempts, as many being made against her life, as against any Princeesse that euer liued: yet she was still confident in her Satiour, whose name she glorified in all her actions, confessing her victories, preferuings, dignities, to be all his, as appeared by many luculent examples, this one seruing for the rest, that after the diffipation of the Spanish Armatho accounted inuincible, she came in person to *Paules* crosse, and there, among the meanest of her people, confessed, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis; sed nomini tuo Gloria.* And as she was euer constant in cherishing that faith wherein shee was from her infancie nourisht, so was shee faithful of her word, with her people, and with forraine nations. And albeit I know some (too humorously affected to the Roman gouernement) make a question in this place, whether her highnesse first brake not the truce with the King of *Spaine*: to that I could answere, (were it pertinent to mee in this place, or for a poore shepheard to talke of state,) with vnreproouable truths, that her highnes suffred many wrongs before she left off the league. 20

O, saith *Thenot*, in some of those wrongs resolue vs, and thinke it no vnfitting thing, for thou that hast heard the songs of that warlike Poet *Philesides*, good *Melæbee*, and smooth tongued *Melicert*, tell vs what thou hast obserued in their sawes, seene in thy owne experience, and heard of vndoubted truths touching those accidents: for that they adde, I doubt not, to the glory of our *Eliza*. 24

To this entreatie *Collin* condiscended, and thus spake. It is not vnknown the Spaniard, a mighty nation, abounding with treasure, being warres finewes, torne from the bowels of Mines, fetcht from the sands of Indian Riuers, by the miserable captiued natiues, haue purposed to be Lordes of *Europe*. *France* they haue attempted and failed in, *Nauarre* they haue greatly distressed, *Lumbardy* the garden of the world, they are possessed of: *Naples* and *Sicilie*, *Sardinia*, *Corsica*, are forced to obey their lawes: and that they reckoned *England* should be theirs, with such small ease, euen in a maner with threatenng, their Songs, taught little infants from *Andoloxia* to *Galixia*, are witnesse. 36

The dice were cast : her Maiesties Subiects craftily put into the Inquisition vpon euery small colour : if they scaped, which seldome sorted out so wel, aliue, could of their goods haue no restitution. Their King
 4 gaue pensions to our Queenes Rebellious fugitiue subiectes, and not onely to such, that in regard of their Religion fled the land, but vnto such as had attempted to resist her in actiue rebellion : and yet not staying there, out of his treafury proposed rewards for sundry to attempt
 8 the murder of her sacred person : of which perfidious guilt she neuer was tainted : let any Spaniard, or Spanish affected English, proue where she euer hired, abetted, or procured any such against their kings Maiestie, and I wil yeeld to be esteemed as false as falshood it selfe :
 12 nay, they cannot deny, but that euen with the Rebels of her Realme of *Ireland*, stird vp to barbarous and inhumane outrages by the Spanish policie, shee hath no way dealt but by faire and laudable warre.

But before I enter into her Maiesties lenitie in that Irish warre,
 16 against fundry knowne Rebels, and punishing some of her subiects, that vpon a zeale to her, or perchance, to get themselues a glorie, aduentured their owne liues by trecherie to cut off the liues of some great Leaders of the Rebels, I wil a little digresse, lest I should be
 20 thought, after her death, to maintaine the fire of hate, which I euer in heart desired might honourably be quencht, betweene these potent Kingdomes of *England* and *Spaine*.

I wish all that reade this, to bury old wrongs, & to pray that it
 24 would please G o D of his inestimable mercie, to roote out all malice from Christian Nations : and, as our Royall Soueraigne now rainging, hath conserued league and peace with al Princes, so, for the weale of Christendome, it may more and more increase, that the open enemies
 28 of Christ may the better be repelled from those wealthy Kingdomes in the East, where they haue many hundred yeares most barbarously tyrannized : for no man doubts, but the blood shed within these thirtie yeares, as well of English, as Scottish, Spanish, Dutch, and Portugall,
 32 in the quarrell of Religion, might, if G o D had so beene pleased, bin able to haue driuen the heathen Monarch from his neereft holde in *Hungaria*, to the fal of *Danubia* in the *Eurine* sea, especially with the affistaunce of the French that haue cruelly false, either vpon others
 36 swords.

But I trust God hath suffered this offence, to adde more glory to our mighty King, that hee should be the most famous of al his predeceffors, as indeed he is the most mightie, and hath beene raised to this Realme as a Sauour, to deliuer *England*, and make it more 4 abundant in blessings, when many lookt it should haue had al her glory swallowed vp of spoile.

The highnesse of his imperial place, greatnesse of his blood, mightinesse of his alliance, but most, his constancy in the true profession of 8 Religion, euen amid my sorrowes, *Thenot*, fil me with ioyes : when I consider how a number that gaped for our destruction, haue their mouths shut close, yet emptie where they thought to eate the sweetes of our painful sweate : but God be praised, as I faide before, her 12 Highnesse that ruled vs many yeeres in peace, left vs, in her death, more secure, by committing vs to our lawful Prince, matcht to a royal fruitful Lady, that hath borne him such hopeful issue, that the dayes we lately feared, I trust are as farre off, as this instant is, from the 16 end of al earthly times : who shal not onely, with their royall father, maintaine these his kingdomes in happy peace, but subiect more vnder him, and spreade the banners of Christ in the face of misbelieuers, 20

In this hope I here breake off, and returne to our late Soueraignes care of keeping Faith, euen toward her Rebel subiects, which I wil manifest in some two or three examples of the Irish.

When the *Oneale*, in the time of that memorable Gentleman Sir 24 *Henry Sidney* his Deputie-ship of *Ireland*, was mightily strengthened in his Country, and so potent, that the Deputie had many dangerous and vnadvantageable skirmishes against him ; A seruant of her Maiesties, one *Smith*, thinking to doe a worthy peece of seruice, by 28 poysoning the *Oneale*, prepared a little bottle, parted in the midst ; one side containing good wine, the other with tempered poyson of the same colour, and that he carries to the *Oneale*, vnder colour of gratification for that his armie lay farre from the Sea, or Marchantable 32 Townes, and hee thought Wine was vnto him very daintie : which the *Oneale* accepted kindly, for that the faide *Smith* was borne in the *Oneales* Countrey : and such the Irish doe especially, and before

others, trust to bring messages, euen from their greatest enemies, vnder whome they serue.

But the deceit being quickly spide, *Smyth* was by the *Oneill* sent
4 bound to the Deputie, to whose plot hee would faine haue imputed
the same practise : but contrarily, the Deputie publikely punished the
said *Smyth*, and her Maiestie refus'd him for her seruant ; saying, she
would keepe none neare her that would deale trecherously, no, though
8 it were against traitors.

The like example was showne on an other that would haue
attempted the poisoning of *Rory Og*, a bloody and dangerous Rebell.

To which may be added, that her Highnesse, among other trespasses,
12 objected by her Attorney against a conuicted Deputie, was, that he
went about by poyson to haue tooke away the life of *Feff Mac Hue*,
a Rebell more immane & barbarous than any of the other two : the
Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common Pleas (yet liuing) opening at the
16 same time, how iust a spirit her Maiestie was possessed with, that shee
hated treason, euen to traitors ; much more, then, to annointed Kings,
whose honors and reputations she so maintained, that shee not long
since punished by fine and imprisonment, a wealthy railer, for
20 vnreuerent words spoken against the person of king *Philip*, her open
and professedemie : So faithfull, so iust, so gracious was she.

And to make it more plaine, that *Spaine* intended England the first
wrong, so long time before it was muttered ; but after that memorable
24 battell of *Lepanto*, wherein *Don Iohn* of *Austria* obtained the trium-
phant Christian victorie against the Turkes ; to rewarde him, England
was the kingdome set downe, being then in her Maiesties possession :
but hee had it, when they could giue him it that promised the same,
28 which was at latter *Lammas*. And I trust his Neece shall haue as
good successe, with her pretended title. For if God strengthened her
Maiestie so, that against her, being a woman, they could not preuaile,
we trust his Almightynesse will be as carefull of our King, being
32 alreadie Lord of three such people as haue seldome bene equalled in
battell, except they haue vnnaturally contended among themselues :
the fight of which day, deare shepherds, let vs pray neuer againe to
see. Besides, to expresse her farther intent : to preserue faith and
36 league, notwithstanding infinite of open wrongs, and certaine

knowledge that a Nauie for inuasion of this Realme had bene preparing more than fiteene yeare; yet did she beare, vntill againft all lawe of Nations, the Ambaffador liedger of *Spaine*, honoured with many fauours, did notwithstanding plot and confeder with natie 4 traitors of this land; and the matter being apparantly proued, hee was by her milde sufferance admitted to depart the Realme, without any violence: to his perpetuall reproach, and her neuer dying glorie. Well, I will here conclude touching this vertue of faith both towarde 8 God and man: she was as firme in the one as mortalitie coulde bee; and in the other, approued glorious among all the Princes of her time.

For Hope, the second diuine vertue, she rather therein abounded, 12 than was any way wanting; for her Hope was no way wandring: she beleeued, and it came to passe; her enemies arise, but before their arising, shee was certaine to see them fall; shee hauing, by example of things past, nothing doubted of things to come. And she was not 16 deceiued till the houre of her death. For euer her expectation was fulfilled; she kept peace within, chased the spoyler without; and euen as it is sung of *Epaminondas*, that valiant Theban Captaine, in his last victorious battell, wherein yet death of him got victorie, he thus 20 gloried: Herein am I comforted, that I dye a conquerour. For euen when death laid his last siege to her yet vvanquished life, *Tyrone*, the long disturber of her State, besought mercie at her feete. O Nymphs and Shepheards, doubt not she was full of diuine Hope, whose heart 24 obtained euer the thing it faithfully desired: and that her defires were all of faith, I could adde infinite examples to these alreadie alledged, but that it is needelesse to cast water in the Sea, or to make question of that all men knowe, and will confesse, except some whose heartes 28 are straungers from *Truth*, and the professed Receptacles of falsehood.

Her Charitie, the thirde and principall diuine Grace to the eye of mortalls: (for that Faith and Hope bend principally their seruice to 32 Heauen, and Charities effectes are manifested on earth) hath bene extended ouer all her Realmes, and stretched to the comfort of her oppressed neighbours. The multitudes of poore daily relieued from her purse, the numbers of sicke persons yearely visited, and by her 36

owne hand their corrupt fores toucht, the washing of poore womens
 feete, and releeuing their wants, was a signe that she was humble, as
 well as charitable: for Humilitie is Charities sifter; they are two twins
 4 borne at one time; & as they are borne together in any soule whateuer,
 so doe they liue and die together: the humble spirit being euer
 charitable, and the charitable euer humble: for it is as impossible to
 haue a proud man charitable, as to reconcile fier and water; or to
 8 make accord betweene any contraries. As she was in these particu-
 lars, exceeding all Ladies of her time, giuen to this helpfull vertue, so
 had she general impositions through all her kingdome, for her well
 able subiects to follow her example: and so much did her example
 12 preuaile, that besides the ordinary and weekely almes distributed
 through the Realme, there haue bene more particular Almes-
 houses builded for the reliefe of the aged, than in any fixe Princes
 Raignes before. And as all parts of England haue in this im-
 16 itation bene very forward: so hath the Citie of London exceeded
 all; wherein diuers priuate men haue builded sundry houses for
 the poore, and allowed them pensions: but the Corporations haue
 bene most bountifull, as most able: and among all, the Right worship-
 20 full the Merchant Taylors haue exceeded the rest; all hauing done well,
 that haue done any thing, but they best of any other, as I will one day,
 in a song of liberal Shepheards, thankfully expresse: though for my
 selfe I know him not in the least gift to whom I am in that sort
 24 bounden; but I ken not, *Thenot*, how I may, for there is none liuing
 but may lacke. As the Citie, so many knights, Gentlemen, honour-
 able and deuout persons, haue followed her example: aboue the rest,
 an honorable, carefull, reuerend and learned watchman, as full of
 28 mildnesse and pietie, as he is of yeares and greefes for his good and
 royall Mistres losse; within few miles of this Citie, hath builded a
 worthy Receptacle to the like charitable end.

As for the poore and decrepit with age, her Royall Maiestie had
 32 this charitable care; so for soldiers, and suters, she was very prouid-
 ent. The last, being opprest in any part of her Realms by men of
 much wealth and little conscience, she allowd them counsell and
 proceedings in *Forma pauperis*, & maintenance weekely in the
 36 Termes, for some part of their succour. For fouldiers, and men

of seruice, her decrees of prouision are extant: besides, it is most cleare, no Prince in the world, to land- or Sea-men, was more bountifull or willing, than her Highnesse: out of her Coffers it went; but there is an olde Prouerbe, *Thenot*, carriage is deare: and I haue 4 heard, but I will stand to nothing; base Ministers, and vnder officers, curtall the liberalities of great and potent masters. Some haue in her time beene taken with the manner, and, besides bodily punishment and fines, displaced: as I well remember, and cannot omit amid my 8 greefe to tell, though somewhat from this subiect it diffent, being of a fellow too meane: how her highnesse, in one of her progresse, walking in the garden of a house where she was receiued, being somewhat neere the high waie, heard on a sodaine, a market woman cry: and 12 from an Arbour beheld one of her owne seruants, a Taker vp of prouision, vñe the woman vnciuilly: whereupon the cause being examined, and the poore woman found by the same fellowe to be wrongd, as well afore as then, her highnesse causd him presently to be 16 discharged of her seruice and punished: yet the fault being but slight, the Taker was countenanced to make sute to be restord: and some halfe yeare after, fell downe before her Maiestie, desiring mercie and restoring: her highnesse, pittying his distresse, commaunded him to 20 be prouided for in some place where he could not wrong her poore subiects, but in any case not to make him a Taker. Many such false ones she hath punished with death. I could in this, as all the rest, reckon multitudes of examples, but I will knit all vp with her Excel- 24 lence in this Act of Charitie extended to her neighbours: whom she hath by her bountie deliuered from the tyrannie of oppression, & aided the right of others against rebellious subiects: others, assisted to recouer their kingdoms, not sparing millions to sustaine the quarrell of 28 the righteous. The reward of which mercy & charitie she now finds, receiuing infinite glories for her abounding Charitie, being done for his cause that leaueth no deed of mercie vnrecompenced.

As she was richly stored with diuine graces, so, in morall vertues, 32 no Princessè euer liuing in the earth can be remembred to exceede her. Her wisdome was, without question, in her life by any vnequallèd, she was sententious, yet gracious in speech; So expert in Languages that she answered most Embassadors in their natiue tongues: her 36

capacitie was therewith so apprehensiuē, and inuention so quicke, that if any of them had gone beyonde their bounds, with maieftie vndaunted she would haue limited them within the verge of their 4 duties, as she did royally, wisely, and learnedly, the last fruting *Poland* messenger, that thought with stalking lookes and swelling words to daunt her vndaunted Excellence. But as he came proud, he returned not without repentance: hauing no other wrong here, but 8 the sinne of his own fausinesse.

Many such examples I could set downe, but I will satisfie you with one more. When the Spaniards hauing their *Armatho* ready, temporisde with her highnes Commissioners in the low Countries, thinking 12 to finde her highnesse vnprouided; at last, when they accounted all sure, they sent her their Kings choyce, either of peace or warre, wittily included in foure Latine verses: portending, that if she would cease to defend the low Countries, restore the goods taken by reprifall from 16 the Spaniards, build vp the Religious houses diuerted in her Fathers time, and let the Romane Religion be receiued through her Land; why then she might haue peace: if not, it was too late to expect any. Which proud commaunding Embassie, with royall magnanimitie, 20 gracious wisedome, and fluent wit, she answered instantly in one knowne prouerbiall line, which she sodenly made into a Verse.

Ad Græcas hæc fant mandata Kalendas.

O *Thenot*, did not assurance of our kingly Poets loue to the Muses, 24 somewhat comfort me, I should vtterly dispaire euer to heare Pastoral song againe, fild with any conceit; seeing her Excellence, whose braine being the *Hellicon* of all our best and quaint inuentions, is dried vp by the ineuitable heate of death.

28 Her iustice was such, as neuer any could truly complaine of her; neither did shee pardon faults vnardonable, as murder, rape, Sodomy, that sin almost not to bee namde: neither was there in her time (with her knowledge) extremitie of iustice showne to other male- 32 factors: if any such did fall, it was either by falshood or malice of the euidence, or some other secret wherewith poore Shepheards are vnacquainted: onely this we are taught: that God sometime punisheth the sinnes of parents on their children, to many generations.

36 But for her selfe, she was alwayes so enclined toe quitie, that if she

left Iustice in any part, it was in shewing pittie: as in one generall punishment for murder it appeared: whereas before-time there was extraordinary torture, as hanging wilfull murderers alieue in chaines; shee, hauing compaffion, like a true Shepheardesse, of their soules, 4 though they were of her erring and vtterly infected flocke, said their death satisfied for death: and life for life, was all could be demanded: and affirming more, that much torture distracted a dying man: in particular, she saued many; among some vnworthy of her mercie, that 8 proud fellow, who vniustly named himselfe Doctor *Parry*, and an other, as I remember, called *Patrick* an Irish man: the first hauing offended in *Burglary*, against a Lawier able and willing to take away his life, thereto vrged by many misdemeanours: and for that *Parry* 12 doubted his attempt to kill, & act of felony was without compasse of pardon, considering the place where it was done, and against whom, thought a lease of life safest, which of her benigne mercie he obtained for 21. yeares; but ere three of them were past, he did vnnaturally 16 attempt her death that had giuen him life; for which traiterous ingratitude he worthily was cut off: the Irish man likewise being pardoned for a manslaughter, proued as vnthankfull, and ended as he liued, shamefully. Besides, she was so inclinable to mercie, that her 20 iust and seuerer Iudges tolde her, how some desperate malefactors, building on friends, and hopes of pardon, carde not for offending, but euen scoffed at authoritie; wherof when she heard, shee tooke speciall care, considering it was as great iniustice to pittie some, as spare 24 others, taking order to signe no pardon, except the Iudges hand were at it first, which truly knew the cause why the partie was condemned: by which meanes, murderers and presumptuous offenders were cut off from all hope. 28

One notable example of her iustice among many I will here remember: Certaine condemned for Piracie, hauing made some ende with them they wronged, lay for their liues at her mercie; and the Iudge of her Admiraltie hauing signified fauourably of the qualitie of 32 their offence, she was moued to pittie them, and had commanded their pardon to be drawne. In the meane time two of them, trained vp in the fashion of our common Cutters, that I may tell thee, *Thenot*, swarme rather like diuels than men about the countrey, that sweare as 36

if they had license to blaspheme, and stabbe men as if they had
 authoritie; nay, sometime themselues for very trifles: two such, I say,
 were in the company of these condemned Pyrates, hourelly hoping for
 4 their liues: and brauing either other of their manhood, saying, one
 durst more than the other: the eldest, being Maister of their late ship
 wherein they had sailed to that place of sorrow, flyces his owne flesh
 with a knife, asking the other if he durst doo as much: the youker
 8 was very readie, and two or three times followed the olde foole, in that
 desperate wounding of himselfe. This brutish acte being committed
 in the prison belonging to her Maiesties owne house, came quickly to
 her royall eare, and some fewe dayes after, their pardon to be signed;
 12 who graciously gaue life to all the rest; but commaunded them by
 expresse name to execution, saying, they were vnworthy mercie, that
 of themselues had none: adding, it was very likely, that such as in a
 prison, and in their state, would be so cruell to shead their owne
 16 bloud, would haue small compassion of others whom they ouercame
 at Sea; and so leauing them to the lawe, they were worthily exe-
 cuted.

Of her mercie nothing can be saide more, but that it equalled, or
 20 rather as I said before, exceeded her iustice. Among infinite numbers
 whom she pardoned, that one especially being a cleare witnesse, who
 shot the Gunne off against *Greenwich*, euen into her Maesties Barge,
 hurt the next man to her, at broade daylight; almost impossible to be
 24 excused by negligence or ignorance; for that any man, hauing his
 peece charged, would rather vpon retyring home, haue discharged it
 among the Reedes, than toward the bredth of the Riuer, whose siluer
 breft continually bore vp a number of vessels, wherein men passed on
 28 fundrie affaires. How euer wilfull or vnwilfull the acte was, done it
 was; and by a Iurie he was found guiltie, and adjudged to die: toward
 execution hee was ledde with such clamour and iniuries of the multi-
 tude, as sildome any the like hath bene seene or heard; so hainous
 32 and odious his offence appeared vnto them, that, being vpon the ladder
 readie to be cast off, the common people had no pittie of him: when
 euen iust in that moment of dispaire and death, her Maiestie sent a
 gracious pardon, which deliuered him, to all mens wonder. I want
 36 but the Arcadian Shepheards inchaunting phraze of speaking, that was

many times witnesse to her iust mercies, and mercifull iustice: yet rude as I am, I haue presumed to handle this excellent Theame, in regard the Funerall hastens on, of that sometime most Serene Lady, and yet I see none, or at least past one or two, that haue sung any 4 thing since her departure worth the hearing; and of them, they that are best able, scarce remember her Maiestie. I cannot now forget the excellent and cunning *Collin* indeed; (for alas, I confesse my selfe too too rude,) complaining that a liberal *Mecænas* long since dying, was 8 immediately forgotten, euen by those that liuing most laboured to aduance his fame; and these as I thinke close part of his songs:

Being dead, no Poet seekes him to reuiue,
Though many Poets flattered him aliuē. 12

Somewhat like him, or at least to that purpose, of a person more excellent, though in ruder verse, I speake.

Death now hath ceaz'd her in his ycie armes,
That sometime was the Sun of our delight: 16
And pittileffe of any after-harmes,
Hath veyld her glory in the cloude of night.

Nor doth one Poet seeke her name to raise,
That liuing, hourelly striu'd to sing her praise. 20
He that so well could sing the fatall strife
Betweene the royall Rosēs White and Red,
That 'praif'd so oft *Eliza* in her life,
His Muse seemes now to dye, as shee is dead: 24

Samuel Daniel

Thou sweetest song-man of all English fwaines,
Awake for shame, honour ensues thy paines.
But thou alone deseru'dst not to be blamde:
He that sung fortie yeares her life and birth,
And is by English Albions so much famde,
For sweete mixt layes of maiestie with mirth,

William 28th Name

Doth of her losse take now but little keepe;
Or else I gesse he cannot sing, but weepe. 32
Neither doth *Coryn* full of wight and wit,
That finisht dead *Muscæus* gracious song,

Henry 28th Name

- With grace as great, and words, and verse as fit ;
 Chide meager death for dooing vertue wrong :
 He doth not seeke with songs to deck her herfe,
 4 Nor make her name liue in his liuely verse.
 Nor does our English *Horace*, whose steele pen Ben Jon
 Can draw Characters which will neuer die,
 Tell her bright glories vnto listning men ;
 8 Of her he seemes to haue no memorie.
 His Muse an other path desires to tread,
 True Satyres scourge the liuing, leaue the dead.
 Nor doth the filuer tonged *Melicert*, Shake
 12 Drop from his honied muse one sable teare
 To mourne her death that graced his desert,
 And to his laies open her Royall eare.
 Shepheard, remember our *Elizabeth*,
 16 And sing her Rape, done by that *Tarquin*, Death.
 No lesse doe thou (sweete finger *Coridon*) ; Michael ?
 The Theame exceedeth *Edwards Isabell*,
 Forget her not in *Poly-Albion* ;
 20 Make some amends, I know thou loudst her well.
 Thinke twas a fault to haue thy Verses seene
 Praising the King, ere they had mournd the Queen.
 And thou delicious sportiue *Musidore*, Shakespeare
 24 Although thou haue resignd thy wreath of Bay,
 With Cypresse bind thy temples, and deplore
Elizas winter in a mournfull Lay :
 I know thou canst, and none can better sing
 28 Herfe songs for her, and *Pæans* to our King.
 Quicke *Antihorace*, though I place thee heere, Shakespeare
 Together with yong *Mælibee* thy frend : John 1
 And *Heroes* ¹ last *Musæus*, all three deere,
 32 All such whose vertues highly I commend :
 [1 Orig. *Heure*.
 See p. 112, 'T
 the Reader.']
 Proue not ingrate to her that many a time
 Hath stoopt her Maiestie, to grace your rime.
 And thou that scarce hast figd thy infant muse
 36 (I vse thine owne word), and commend thee best,

In thy proclayming *Iames* : the rest misvise
The name of Poetry, with lines vnblest ;
 Holding the Muses to be masculine.
 I quote no such absurditie in thine. 4
Thee doe I thanke for will ; thy worke let passe :
But with some of the former had first writ,
That, from their Poems, like reflecting glasse
Steeld with the puritie of Art and wit, 8
 Eliza might haue liude in euery eye,
 Alwaies beheld till Time and Poems dye.
But cease you Goblins, and you vnder Elues,
That with rude rimes and meeters reasonlesse, 12
Fit to be sung for such as your base selues,
Prefume to name the Muses Patroneisse :
 Keepe your low Spheres ; she hath an Angell spirit :
 The learnedst Swaine can hardly sing her merit. 16
Onely her brother King, the Muses trust
(Blood of her Grandfires blood, plac'd in her Throne)
Can raise her glory from the bed of dust :
To praise her worth belongs to Kings alone. 20
 In him shall we behold her Maiestie,
 In him her vertue liues and cannot die.

At this, *Thenot* and the rest desired him to proceede in his discourse of her vertues ; remembring where he left, at Iustice ; and though the matter 24 pleasd them so well that they could indure the hearing many daies, yet seeing the Sunne began to dye the West Sea with vermilion tincture, the pallace of the morning being hidden in fable clouds, & that the care of their flockes must be respected, requested him to be 28 as breefe, as the time limited him.

To which *Collin* answered : *Thenot*, I perceiue thou art as all or the most part of the world is, carefull onely of thine own : and how euer frends fall, yet profit must be respected. Well, thou dost well ; 32 and in this I dubbly praise thee : to carke for sheepe and lambs that cannot tend themselues, & not to mourne as without hope our great Shepheardeesse, who, after long life and glory on earth, hath obtained

a longer and more glorious life in heauen. But to proceede. As she was constant in faith, stedfast in hope, cheerefull in giuing, prudent in speaking, iust in punishing, but most mercifull in pardoning, so, for
 4 the third morrall vertue, Temperance, there was in no age before, a woman so exalted to earthly honour euer read off; that so long, so
 grateously, in outward & domestick affaires gouerned her kingdom,
 familie, & person, with like moderation.

8 First, for her kingdome: what can be deuised more neere the meane, than she hath in all things followed? For in religion as in
 other things, there hath beene an extreame erring from the truth,
 which like all vertues, (being indeede the head of all) keepeth place
 12 in the midst; so hath she established the true Catholicke and Apostol-
 icall Religion in this Land, neither mingled with multitudes of Idle
 superstitions; nor yet wanting true honour and reuerence for the
 Ministerie, in laudable and long receiued ceremonies.

16 But here I shall be carpped at, in that I call the Religion profest in
 her time, true Catholike and Apostolicall: considering, the Sea of
Rome, and such English onely as be her sworne Sonnes, thinke that
 feate all—one to hold the Apostolicall faith: excluding her Maiestie,
 20 and all other Christian Princes with their subiects, that haue not false
 before that Chaire, as people woorthie to be cutte off from Christes
 congregation: giuing them names of Protestants, Lutherans, and I
 know not what. And on another side, a selected company, that would
 24 needs be counted Saints & holy ones, when there is nothing but
 corruption in their harts; they forfooth condemned her sacred gouerne-
 ment for Antichristian, when, to the amazement of superstitious
 Romanes, & selfe-praying Sectuaries, God approued hir faith by his
 28 loue towards her. And lest I should be taskd of ignorance, and termed
 a Nullifidian, in defending neither of these sides, and onely of the
 faith that the *Colliar* profest, which was euer one with the most, I
 say, I was borne and brought vp in the Religion profest by that most
 32 Christian Princeesse *Elizabeth*, who beleued not that the spirite of
 God was bound or tyde to any one place, no more to *Rome* than
Antioch; that the Candlestick of any Church might be remooude, for
 neglecting their first loue, and teaching traditions of men, in steede of
 36 sacred veritie: and no man can denie but the Church of *Rome* hath so

taught, and standeth not in her first estate, but if it were in the Primitive Church perfectly and fully established: then hath it received many traditions since, which our *Elizabeth*, nor any of her faithfull subjects, would obey, being no way by Gods word thereunto warranted: besides, there is apparent proofes that the Church of *Rome* hath many hundred yeares persecuted with great crueltie: which is no¹ badge of the true Apostolicall Church. [1 orig. no 60]

For the other sort: it is well knowne, they are for the most part, ignorant and mechanick people, leade by some fewe hot spirited fellowes, that would faine haue all alike. These, tying themselues to a more strait course outwardly than other men, and though they be vtterly object to the Romanistes, yet haue they more hee Saints and she Saints among them than are in the Romish Kalender; where none, or at least but very fewe, are called Saints, but holy Virgins, Martyrs, and Confessors; but all the bretheren and sisters of the other side, are, at the first receiuing into their Communion, Sainted, if it be but Kit Cobler, and Kate his wife; and both hee and she presume they haue as sufficient spirites to teach and expound the Scriptures, as either *Peter*, or *John*, or *Paule*, for so bluntly they terme the blessed Apostles: but their vanitie and pride our *Elizabeth* hated, and therefore bridled their waies, and was not moued with their hypocriticall fastes; because they fasted to strife and debate, as it is written by the Prophet *Esay*. 58. and to smite with the fist of wickednes.

Her highnes therefore taught all her people the vndoubted truth: that faith in Christ alone, the way, the doore, and the life: not turning either to the right hand, or to the left: and in this, being the best meane, her Temperance cheefly appeered: this rule she taught her kingdome, her familie, her selfe: at least, caused them to be taught by excellent Pastors, to whom humbly she gaue publike eare

As in this, so for apparell, manners and diet, she made Lawes, and gaue example in hir owne person: to curb the vanitie of pride in garments, by expresse Statutes appointed all men and women to be apparelled in their degree and calling. To repress the excesse of drinking and hated sinne of drunkenesse, she hath commaunded no drinke in her Land to be brued aboue an easie price: and to auoid gurmardize, she hath yearely commanded the Lent and Fasting-daies

to be kept, as in times before, not for superstition sake, but common policie, to haue Gods creatures receiued indifferently; and also to increase Marriners for the strength of the Ile, whose numbers, while
 4 fish is contemnd, by neglect of fishing mightily decay: fishers being indeed, pretty traird Marriners, by reason that they haue experience in most of the Hauens, Creekes, Shoales, Flats, and other profits and daungers neere the places they vse. But what should I say; if they
 8 that will onely make the Scripture their cloke, and yet respect not this part, Obey the Magistrate for conscience: their sinne fall vpon themselves. I trust the Prince is excusable, that would his subiects would doe well; and so I am certaine was her Excellence.

12 True, said *Thenot*, but for all her Lawes, these courses were little set by: I haue seene vpstarts jet it gayer than Lords, numbers drinke till they haue seemde dead, & multitudes eate flesh euen vpon good Fryday. What remedie, said *Collon*: they that will breake the Kings
 16 Law, make little account of Gods: such subiects are like false Executors, that performe not the legacies of the dead: her highnes was not the worfe for that good Lawes were violated: they that dealt so with her, dealt worfe with God: offending him double by breaking
 20 his Lawes and hers. But in her owne household and person she obserued all these rules: and though many abroad by corruption were wiuht at; yet fometime there were some taken and paid home.

But her excellling Selfe, though her Table were the abundantliest
 24 furnisht of any Princes in the world with all varietie: yet fed she ofteneft of one dish, and that not of the daintiest. For quaffing, as it was vnfitting her Sex, so she extreamely abhord it, hating superfluitie as hell: and so farre was she from all nicenes, that I haue heard it
 28 credibly reported, and know it by many instances to be true, that she neuer could abide to gaze in a mirror or looking glasse: no, not to behold one, while her head was tyred and adornd, but simply trusted to her attendant Ladies for the comelineffe of her attyre: and that
 32 this is true, *Thenot*, I am the rather perswaded, for that when I was yong, almost thirtie yeeres agoe, courting it now and than, I haue seene the Ladies make great shift to hide away their looking glasses if her Maiestie had past by their lodgings.

36 O humble Lady, how meeke a spirit hadst thou! how farre from

affecting beautie, or vaine pride : when thou desirft not to see that face
 which all thy subiects longed dayly to behold, and sundry Princes
 came from farre to wonder at.

As in all these things she kept truly the Meane, so likewise in her
 gifts : as I first noted touching her Charitie, which was still so tem-
 pered, notwithstanding her great charge in aiding her distressed neigh-
 bours, that she was euer truly liberall, and no way prodigall : as I
 trust his Royall Maiestie shall by the treasure finde. 8

As she was adorned with all these vertues ; so was she indued with
 Fortitude and princely courage, so plentifully, that her displeasure
 shooke euen her stoutest aduersaries : and those vnnaturall traytors, that
 came armed sundry times with bloodie resolution to lay violent hands
 on her sacred Maiestie, her verie lookes would daunt, and their instru-
 ments prepared for her death, dropt from their trembling hands with
 terror of their consciences, and amazement to behold her counte-
 nance ; nay, when she knew they came of purpose to kill her, she hath
 singled diuers of them alone, and let some passe from her with milde
 caueats a farre off : whose lenitie, rather increasing than diminishing
 their malice, they haue followed destruction, which too timely ouer
 tooke them. 20

I could in this place name many particular men, as *Parry*, and
 others : but I will content yee with one priuate example ouerpassing
 the generall : fortitude she showd in her youth, in her captiuitie, in
 her glory, at all times : for defence of her faith, and all oppressed true
 professors thereof : ending with this example of her high courage and
 assured confidence in God. When *Appletree*, whom I remembred
 before, had hurt her waterman, being next to her in the Barge ; the
 French Ambassador being amazed, and all crying Treason, Treason :
 yet she with an vndaunted spirit, came to the open place of the Barge,
 and bad them neuer feare, for if the shot were made at her, they
 durst not shoote againe : such maiestie had her presence, and such bold-
 nesse her heart, that she despised all feare ; and was, as all Princes are,
 or should be, so full of diuine fulnesse, that guiltie mortalitie durst
 not beholde her but with dazeled eyes. 32

But I wonder, saith *Thenot*, shew in so many yeares built no goodly
 Ædifice wherein her memorie might liue. 36

So did she, answered *Collin*, the goodliest building in the earth, such as, like fleeting Iles, commanded the seas, whose outward walles are dreadfull Engins of brasse, sending fearefull thunder among
 4 enemies. And the inhabitants of those wooden Iles, are worthy Seamen, such as dread no daunger, but for her would haue run euen into destructions mouth. I tell thee, *Thenot*, I haue seene in a fight some like nimble spirites hanging in the aire by little cordes, some lading
 8 ordinance with deathful powder; some charging Muskets, and discharging ruine on their enemies; some at the foreship, others busie at helme, skipping here and there like Roes in lightnesse, and Lyons in courage; that it would haue powred spirit into a sicke man to see
 12 their resolutions. For such tenants made she many buildings, exceeding any Emperors Nauy in the earth, whose seruice I doubt not will be acceptable to her most worthy Successor, our dread Soueraigne Lord and King.

16 Other Pallaces shee had great store of, which shee maintained and yearely repaired; at least, would haue done, if those that hadde care of her surueying, would haue bene as carefull for hers as for their owne.

20 What should I say of her? the cloudie mantle of the night couers the beautie of the heauen: and this euening lookes like those foure dayes that preceded the morning of her death. The beastes the night that shee ended her fate in earth, kept an vnwonted bellowing, so
 24 that I assure thee, *Thenot*, being assured of her sicknes, I was troubled (being awakened with their cries) with imagination of her death, that I pittied not my bleating flocke, who with their innocent notes kept time with my true teares, till the houre of her death was past, when
 28 immediately a heauie sleepe shut vp the windowes of mine eyes: at which time, (as I haue since heard,) deathes eternall sleepe vtterly benumbed all her senses, whose soule (I doubt not) hath alreadie entred endlesse rest, whether God will draw her glorified body in his
 32 great day. Sweete Virgin, shee was borne on the Eue of that blessed Virgins Natiuitie, holy *Mary*, Christs mother: shee dyed on the Eue of the Anunciation of the same most holy Virgin; a blessed note of her endlesse blessednesse, and her societie in heauen with those wise
 36 Virgins, that kept Oyle euer in their Lamps, to awaite the Bride-

groome. Shee came vnto the Crowne after her royall sisters death, like a fresh Spring euen in the beginning of Winter, and brought vs comfort, as the cleare Sunne doth to storme-dressed Marriners; shee left the Crowne likewise in the winter of her Age, and the beginning of our Spring: as if the Ruler of heauen had ordained her coronation in our sharpest Winter to bring vs happinesse, & vncrowned her in our happiest Spring, to leaue vs in more felicitie by her Succeder. O happie beginning, and more happy ende: which notwithstanding, as 8 naturall sonnes and subiects, let her not goe vnwept for to her graue. This euening let vs be like the Euening, that drops dewy teares on the earth: and while our hyndes shut vp the sheepe in their foldes, sing a Funerall song for the losse of diuine *Elizabeth*; inuocating 12 absent Schollers to bewaile her, whome in fundrie Schooles shee cherisht, and personally in either of their Vniuersities visited: Let vs bid souldiers lament her, toward whom, besides many apparant signes of her exceeding loue, this is one most worth memorie; shee 16 came amongst them mounted at *Tilburie*, beeing gathered into a royall Armie against the Spanish Inuasion; promising to share with them in all fortunes, if the enimie durst but shewe his face aland. Let Citizens likewise shed teares for her losse, especially those of *London*, 20 to whom she was euer a kinde Soueraigne, and bountifull neighbour.

I neede not bid the Courtiers weepe, for they can neuer forget the countenance of their gracious Mistresse, till they haue ingrauen in their 24 hearts the fauour of their most royall Maister. For vs * poore Shepherds, though we are not able to sute our selues in blackes fine enough to adorne so Royall an Enterment, yet, *Thenot*, quicken thy inuention; *Dryope* and *Chloris* shall beare parte; and let vs conclude 28 our sorrowe for *Eliza* in a Funerall Hymne, that shall haue power to drawe from the swelling Cloudes waters to assist our woe. The Springs, taught by the teares that breake from our eys, alreadie ouerflowe their boundes: The Birdes fitte mute to heare our musicke, 32 and our harmeleffe focke harken to our mones.

To this they all, as gladly as their grieffe would suffer them, consented: *Collin* for his broken pipe tooke *Cuddyes*, who could neither sing nor play, he was so full of passion and sighes.

[* orig. as 36

*The Funerall Song betweene Collin and Thenot;
Dryope and Chloris, upon the death of the sa-
cred Virgin Elizabeth.*

- 4 Collin.
YE sacred Muses dwelling,
 Where Art is euer swelling;
 Your learned Fount forsake,
 8 Helpe Funerall Songs to make:
 Hang them about her Herse
 That euer loued Verse.
 Clio writ downe her Storie,
 12 That was the Muses Glorie.
 Driope.
 And ye oft-footed Howers.
 Make readie Cypresse Bowers:
 16 Instead of Roses sweete
 (For pleasant Spring-time meete)
 Strew all the pathes with Yeugh,
 Night-shade and bitter Reugh.
 20 Bid Flora hide her Treasure:
 Say tis no time of pleasure.
 Thenot.
 And you diuineſt Graces,
 24 Veyle all your sacred faces
 With your bright shining haire,
 Shew euery ſigne of care:
 The Hart that was your Phane,
 28 The cruell Fates haue ſtaine:
 From earth no power can raiſe her,
 Onely our Hymnes may praiſe her.
 Chloris.
 32 Muses and Howres and Graces,
 Let all the hallowed places
 Which the cleere Moone did view,
 Looke with a ſable hiew:

*Let not the Sunne be seene,
But weeping for the Queene
That Grace and Muse did cherish.
O, that such worth should perish!* 4
Collin.

*So turne our verse, and on this lofty Pine,
Each one ingraue for her some Funerall line:
Thus I beginne.* 8

Collins Epitaph.

*Eliza, Maiden Mirror of this Age,
Earths true Astræa while she liu'de and raign'de,
Is throwne by Death from her triumphant Stage,
But by that fall hath endlesse glorie gain'de: 12
And foolish death would faine if he could weepe,
For killing Her he had no power to keepe.*

Thenots Epitaph. 16

*Eliza rich and Royall, faire and iust:
Giues heauen her Soule, and leaues her Fleish to dust.*

Dryopes Epitaph.

*There is no beautie but it vades,
No glory but is veyld with shades:
So is Eliza, Queene of Maids,* 20

stoopt to her Fate.

*Yet Death in this hath little thriu'de,
For thus her vertues haue atchiu'de, 24
She shall, by verse, liue still reuiu'de
in spight of Hate.*

Chloris Epitaph. 28

*Eliza that astonished her foes,
Stoopt her rebellious subiects at her feete:*

*Whose minde was *Still the same in ioy and woes,
Whose frowne was fearefull, and her fauours sweete: 32
Swaid all this land, but most her selfe she swaide,
Liu'de a chaste Queene, and di'de a Royall Maide.*

Her Roy-
word or
tto was,
rper Ea-
n.

These Epitaphs ended, the Nymphs and Shepheards led by *Collin* and *Thenot*, who afore plaide heauy tunes on their oaten pipes, gotte to their feuerall cottages, and spent their time till midnight, mourning 4 for *Eliza* : But Sleepe, the equaller of Kings and captiues, banished their forrowes. What humor they are in after rest, you shall in the morning heare : for commonly, as the day is, so are our affections disposed.





¶ The order and proceeding at the Funerall of the Right High and Mightie
Princesse Elizabeth Queene of *England, France, and Ireland*: from the Pallace of *Westminster* called *White-hall*
To the Cathedrall Church of Westminster: the
 28. of April. 1603.

First, the Knight Marshals man, to make way.		Coopers.
Next, the 240. poore women by foure and foure.	4	Wine-porters. Conducts in the Bakehouse. Bel-ringer. Maker of Spice-bags. Cart takers, chosen by the bord. Long Cartes. Cart takers.
Then, seruants of Gentlemen, Es- quiers, and Knights.		Of the Almery. Of the Stable. Of the Woodyard.
Two Porters.	8	Skullery Paftrie. Skalding house. Poultrie. Caterie. Boyling house. Larder. Kitchin. Laundrie. Ewry. Confectionary. Wafery. Chaundry. Pitcherhouse. Buttrie. Seller. Pantrie.
Next, foure Trumpeters.		
After them		
<i>Rose, Pursuant at Armes.</i>	12	
Two Sergeants at Armes.		
<i>The Standerd of the Dragon.</i>	16	
Two Querries leading a horse.		
Then the messengers of the Cham- ber, foure and foure.		
Children of the Almondry.	20	
Children of the Woodyard,		
Children of the Skullery.		
Children and turners of the pastry.		
The Skalding house.	24	
The Larder.		
After them		
<i>Groomes.</i>		
Wheate porters.	28	

Bakehouse.		Garneter.	
Countinghouse.		Bakehouse.	
Then Noblemens and Embassadors	4	Counting house.	
seruants.		Spicery.	
Groomes of the Chamber.		Chamber,	
Foure Trumpeters,	8	Robes,	
<i>Blewmantle.</i>		Wardrop.	
A Sergeant at Armes.	12	Erles and Countesses seruants.	
<i>The Standerd of the Greyhound.</i>		Foure Trumpeters,	
Two Quirries leading a horse,	16	<i>Portcullis.</i>	
Yeomen of the Seruitors in the		A Sergeant at Armes.	
hall, foure and foure.		<i>The Standerd of the Lion.</i>	
Cart takers,	20	Two Quirries leading a horse	
Porters.		trapped with vel-	
Almondrie.		uet,	
Herbengers.		Sergeant of the vestry.	
Woodyard.	24	Children of the Chappell in purple	
Skullery.		Gent. of the Chappell, in Copes.	
Pastrie.		<i>Clarkes.</i>	
Poultre and skalding house.		Deputie Clarke of the Market.	
Purueyors of the Poultre.	28	Clarkes extraordinarie,	
Purueyors of the Acatrie.		Coferer.	
Stable.		Diet.	
Boyling house.		M. Cooke for the houshold,	
Larder.	32	Pastrie.	
Kitchin.		Larder.	
Ewrie.		Skullerie.	
Confectionarie.		Woodyard.	
Waferie.	36	Poultre.	
Purueyor of the wax.		Bakehouse.	
Tallow Chandler.		Acatrie.	
Chaudrie.		Stable.	
Pitcher house.	40	<i>Sergeants.</i>	
Brewers		Gent. Herbinger.	
Buttrie.		Wood-yard.	
Purueyors.		Skullery.	
Seller.	44	Pastrie.	
Pantrie.			

The Funerall.

III

- | | | |
|---------------------------------------|----|--|
| Caterie. | | <i>Rouge Croffe.</i> |
| Larder. | | Two Sergeants of Armes. |
| Ewry. | | <i>The Banner of Cornewall.</i> |
| Seller. | 4 | Aldermen of <i>London.</i> |
| Pantrie. | | Solliciter, Attorney, and Sergeant. |
| Bakehouse. | | 8 Maister of Reuels, & M. of the Tents. |
| Maister Cooke of the Kitchin. | | Knights Bachelors. |
| Clarkes of the Querrie. | | Lord chiefe Baron, and Lord chiefe |
| Second and third clarke of the | | Iustice of the Common pleas. |
| Chaundrie. | | Maister of the Iewell house. |
| Second & third clarke of the Kitchin. | 12 | Knights Embassadors, & Gentlemen |
| Superuifors of the Dreffer. | | Agents. |
| Surueyer of the dreffer, for the | | Sewers for the Queene. |
| chamber. | | Sewers for the Body. |
| Mufitions. | 16 | Esquires of the Body. |
| Apoticaries and Chirurgions. | | <i>Lancafter and Windfor.</i> |
| Sewers of the hall. | | <i>The Banner of Wales.</i> |
| Marshall of the hall. | | 20 <i>The Banner of Ireland.</i> |
| Sewers of the chamber | | Maister of the Requests. |
| Groome Porter. | | Agents for <i>Venice</i> , and the Estates. |
| Gentlemen vsfers and waiters. | | Lord Maior of <i>London.</i> |
| Clarke, Marshall, and Auenor. | 24 | Sir <i>John Popham</i> . Sir <i>John Fortescue</i> . |
| Chiefe clarke of the wardrop. | | Sir <i>Rober Cicell</i> principall Secretary. |
| Chiefe clarke of the Kitchin. | | Controller & Treafurer of houhold. |
| Two clarkes controllers. | | Barons. |
| Clarke of the Greene cloth. | 28 | Bishoppes. |
| Maister of the houhold. | | Erles eldest sonnes. |
| Cofferer. | | Viscounts. |
| | | Dukes second sonnes. |
| <i>Rouge Dragon.</i> | 32 | Erles. |
| A Sergeant at Armes. | | Marqueses. |
| | | Bishop Almoner. <i>Preacher.</i> |
| <i>The Banner of Chester.</i> | | Lord Keeper. |
| Clarks of the Counfel, foure & foure. | 36 | The French Embassador. |
| Clarks of the priuie Seale. | | Archbifhop of <i>Canterburie.</i> |
| Clarks of the Signet. | | Foure Sergeants of Armes. |
| Clarks of the Parliament. | | 40 <i>The great embrotherd Baner of England</i> |
| Doctfors of Phificke. | | <i>Somerfet</i> and <i>Richmond.</i> |
| The Queenes Chaplaines. | | <i>Yorke</i> , Helme and Creaft. |
| Secretaries for the Latine and French | | <i>Chefter</i> , Target. |
| tongue. | | |

<i>Norrey King at Armes, Sword.</i>	Two Esquiers and a grooms, to attend and leade him away.
<i>Clarenceaux King at Armes, Coate.</i>	Gentlemen vs her, <i>Garter K. of Armes.</i>
After them the Gentlemen vs her with white Rods.	4 Lady Marchionesse of Northampton, assisted by the Lord Treasurer and Lord Admirall,
The liuely picture of her Highnesse whole body, crowned in her Parli- ament Robes, lying on the corps balm'd and leaded, couered with veluet, borne in a chariot, drawne by foure horses trapt in blacke vel- uet.	8 Chiefe mourner, her traine suppor- ted by maister Vicechamberlaine: Two Erles assistants to her, Fourteene Countesses assistants, Gentlewomen of the Priuy chamber.
About it fixe Banner Rolls on each side: Gentlemen pensioners with their Axes downeward.	12 Countesses, Viscountesses Erles daughters, Baronesses.
With them the Footemen.	16 Maids of Honour, of the Priuy chamber.
A Canapy borne ouer the chariot by foure Noblemen.	Captaine of the Guard, with all the Guard following, five and five in 20 a ranke, their holberds downeward.
The Erle of <i>Worcester</i> maister of the horse, leading the Palfrie of Honour.	

To the Reader.

I Loue as little as any man to come in print: but seeing affection hath made me commit this fault, I pray you pardon it; and amend in reading the Printers errors; where, being ill acquainted with Poetrie, he hath passed Herores¹ for Heroes; what euer else seemes harsh, imagine I can write English, and make not the fault mine.

Farewell. *Hen: Chetle.*



¹ This must be for '*Hewres* last *Musaues*,' sig. D 3 of the original, p. 98 of this reprint.

The Shepherds Spring Song, in gratulation of the royall, happy, and flourishing Entrance, to the Maiestie of England, by the most potent and prudent Soueraigne, Iames king of England, France and Ireland. 4

Collin. **T**Henot and Chloris, red lipt Driope,
 Shepherds, Nymphs, Swaines, al that delight in field,
 Liuing by harmelesse thrift your fat heards yeelede, 8
 Why slacke yee now your loued company?
 Vp fluggards, learne, the larke doth, mounted, sing
 His cheerefull Carrolls, to salute our King. 12
 The Mauis, blacke-bird, and the little Wren,
 The Nightingale vpon the hawthorne brire,
 And all the wingd Mufitions in a Quire,
 Do with their notes rebuke dull lazie men.
 Vp shperds, vp; your sloth breeds al your flames 16
 You sleep like beafts, while birds salute K. Iames.
 The gray eyde morning with a bluftring cheeke,
 Like *Englands* royall Rose mixt red and white,
 Summons all eies to pleasure and delight. 20
 Behold the euenings deaws doe vpward reeke,
 Drawn by the Sun, which now doth gild the skie,
 With his light-giuing and world-cheering eie.
 O thats well done; I see your caufe of stay 24
 Was to adorne your temples with fresh flowers,
 And gather beautie to bedecke your bowers,
 That they may seeme the Cabinets of Maie:
 Honor this time, sweetest of all sweete Springs, 28
 That so much good, so many pleasures brings.
 For now alone the liuery of the earth
 Giues not life, comfort, to your bleating Lambes,
 Nor fills the frowting vdders of their dams, 32
 It yeeldes another cause of gleefome mirth,
 This ground weares all her best embroidery,
 To entertaine her Soueraignes maiestie.

- And well she may, for neuer English ground
 Bore such a Soueraigne as this royall Lord :
 Looke vpon all Antiquities Record ;
- 4 In no Inrollment such a King is found.
 Beginne with *Brute*, (if that of *Brute* be true,)
 As I'le not doubt, but giue old Bards their due.
 He was a Prince vnsetled, fought a Shore
- 8 To rest his long-tofft Troyan scattred Race :
 And (as tis fed) found here a resting place :
 Grant this : but yeeld, he did false gods adore.
 The Nations were not calld to Christ that time,
- 12 Blacke Pagan clouds darkned this goodly Clime.
 So, when dissention brought the Romans in,
 No *Cæsar* till the godly *Constantine*,
 (Descended truely from the Brittish line)
- 16 Purgde this Iles aire from Idoll-hated sinne ;
 Yet he in care of *Rome* left Deputies.
 Our *Iames* maintaines (himselfe,) his dignities.
 The Saxon, & the Dane, scourgd with sharp steele,
- 20 (So did the Norman Duke) this beauteous Land,
 Inuading Lords raigne with an yron hand :
 A gentler ruling in this Change we feele,
 Our Lion comes as meekely as a Doue,
- 24 Not conq'ring vs by hurt, but hartly loue.
 Euen as a calme to tempest tossed men,
 As bread to the faint soule with famine vext ;
 As a coole Spring to those with heate perplex,
- 28 As the Sunnes light into a fearefull denne,
 So comes our King : euen in a time of neede,
 To faue, to shine, to comforte and to feede.
 O Shepherds, sing his welcome with sweete notes,
- 32 Nymphs, strew his way with Roses Red and White,
 Prouide all pastimes that may sense delight,
 Offer the fleeces of your flockes white cotes :
 He that now spares, doth in that fauing, spill ;
 Where Worth is little, Vertue likes good will.

Now from the Orchades to the Cornish Iles,
 From thence to *Cambria*, and the Hyberian shore,
 The found of Ciuill warre is heard no more;
 Each Countenance is garnished with smiles, 4
 All in one hymne with sweet contentment fmg,
 The praise and power of *Iames* their onely King.
 Our onely King, one Ile, one Soueraigne;
 O long-defired, and perfected good! 8
 By him the heate of wrath, and boyling blood,
 Is mildely quencht; and Enuie counted vaine:
 One King, one people, blessed vnitie,
 That ties such mightie Nations to agree. 12
 Shepherdes, Ile not be tedious in my Song;
 For that I see you bent to actiue sport;
 Though I perfwade me all time is too short
 To welcome him, whome we haue wisht for long. 16
 Well done, dance on; looke how our little lambs,
 Skippe as you spring, about their fleecie dams.
 Thus were yee wont to trip about the Greene,
 And dance in ringlets, like to Fairie Elues, 20
 Striuing in cunning to exceede your selues,
 In honour of your late falne summer Queene:
 But now exceede; this Maie excelles all Springs,
 Which King & Queene, and Prince & Princeffe brings. 24
 Showt ioyfully, ye Nymphs, and rurall Swaines,
 Your maister *Pan* will now protect your foldes,
 Your Cottages will be as safe as Holdes,
 Feare neither Wolues nor substill Foxes traines, 28
 A Royall King will of your weale take keepe,
 Hee'le be your Shepherd, you shalbe his sheepe.
 He comes in pompe; so should a King appeare;
 Gods Deputie should set the world at gaze; 32
 Yet his milde lookes driue vs from all amaze;
 Clap hands for ioy, our Soueraigne draweth neere;
 Sing *Ið, Ið*, shepherds, dance and fmg,
 Expresse all ioy, in welcoming our King. 36

The aire, the season, and the Earth accord
In Pleasure, Order, both for sight and sense :
All things looke fresh to greet his Excellence,
4 And *Collin* humbly thus salutes his Lord :
 Drad and beloude, liue *Englands* happy King,
 While seasons last, fresh as the liuely spring.

FINIS.



A MOURNEFULL DITTIE

entituled

Elizabeths Losse

together with

A Welcome for King James

(A.D. 1603)

[Reprinted from the unique original in the Heber Collection of Ballads and Broad-sides in the possession of S. Christie-Miller, Esq., of Britwell House, Burnham, Buckinghamshire, to whose kindness the Society is indebted for a transcript of the Ballad, and the collation of the proof with the original.]

A mournfull Dittie, entituled *Elizabeths losse*,
together with a welcome for King *Iames*.

To a pleasant new tune.

- | | | |
|----|---|--|
| 4 | Farewell, farewell, farewell,
braue Englands ioy :
Gone is thy friend
that kept thee from annoy. | Shew forth your loue,
in tongue in hart and deeds.
Lament, lament, &c. |
| 8 | Lament, lament, lament
you English Peeres,
Lament your losse
possest so many yeeres. | Full foure and fortie yeeres
foure moneths seauen dayes,
She did maintaine this realme
in peace alwayes.
Lament, lament, &c. |
| 12 | Gone is thy Queene, the
paragon of time,
On whom grim death
hath spred his fatall line. | In spite of Spaines proud Pope,
and all the rout,
Who Lyon like ran
ranging round about.
Lament, lament, &c. |
| 16 | Lament, lament, &c. | |
| | Gone is that gem which
God and man did loue,
She hath vs left
to dwell in heauen aboue.
Lament, lament, &c. | With traiterous plots to stay
her Royall grace,
Her realme, her lawes
and Gospell to deface,
Lament, lament, &c. |
| | You gallant Ladies
of her Princely traine,
Lament your losse
your loue, your hope, and gaine.
Lament, lament, &c. | Yet time and tide God still
was her defence,
Till for himselfe from vs
hee tooke her hence
Lament, lament, &c. |
| 24 | | |
| 28 | Weepe wring your hands,
all clad in mourning weeds, | We neede not to rehearse
what care what grieffe, |

A Mournefull Dittie.

119

She still endured, and all for our reliefe. Lament, lament, &c.	Mourne Trumpets shrill, mourne Cornets mute & round. Lament, lament, &c.	
We neede not to rehearse what benefits, You all inioyd, what pleasures and what gifts. Lament, lament, &c.	You Poets all braue <i>Shakspeare</i> , <i>Johnson</i> , <i>Greene</i> , Bestow your time to write for Englands Queene. Lament, lament, &c.	4 8
You Virgins all bewayle your Virgin Queene, That Phœnix rare, on earth but sildome seene. Lament, lament, &c.	Returne your songs and Sonnets and your sayes : To set fourth sweete <i>Elizabeths</i> praise. Lament, lament, &c.	12
With Angels wings she pearst the starrie skie, When death, grim death, hath shut her mortall eye. Lament, lament, &c.	In fine all you that loyall harts possesse, With Roses sweete, bedeck hir Princely hearse. Lament, lament, &c.	16
You Nimphs that sing and bathe, in Fountaines cleere : Come lend your helpe to sing in mournefull cheere. Lament, lament, &c.	Bedeck that hearse sprong from that famous King, King <i>Henrie</i> the eight, whose fame on earth doth ring. Lament, lament, &c.	20
All you that doe professe Sweet musicks Art, Lay all aside, your Vyoll Lute and Harpe, Lament, lament, &c.	Now is the time that we must all forget, Thy sacred name oh sweet <i>Elizabeth</i> . Lament, lament, &c.	24 28
Mourne Organs, Flutes, Mourne Sagbuts with sad soūd :	Praying for King <i>Iames</i> , as earst we prayed for thee,	

A Mournefull Dittie.

<p>In all submissiue loue and loyaltie. Lament, lament, &c.</p> <p>4 Beseeching God to blesse his Maiestie with earthly peace and heauens felicitie. 8 Lament, lament, &c.</p> <p>And make his raigne more prosperous here on earth</p>	<p>Then was the raigne of late <i>Elizabeth</i>. Lament, lament, &c.</p> <p>Wherefore all you that subjects true beare names : Still pray with me, and say God saue King <i>Iames</i>. Lament, lament, lament, you English Peeres, Lament your losse enioyd So many yeeres.</p>
---	---

FINIS.

Imprinted at London for T. P.

I. C.'s 12th Epigram, from
“EPIGRAMES.

Serued out in 52. feuerall

*Dishes for euery man to
taft without surfeting.*

Modicum non nocet.

By *I. C. Gent.*



LONDON

Printed by *G. Elde*, for *W. C.* and are
to be folde at his Shop neere
vnto Ludgate.”

[*Bodleian Press-mark*, Malone 373.]



[Sign. B.]

Epigrammes.

W^Ho er'e will go vnto the preffe may see
 The hated Fathers of vilde balladrie :

4 One fings in his bafe note the Riuer Thames
 Shal found the famous memory of noble king *James* ;
 Another faves that he will, to his death,
 Sing the renowned worthineffe of sweet *Elizabeth* ;

8 So runnes their verfe in fuch difordered ftraine,
 And with them dare great maiesty prophane,
 Some dare do this ; fome other humbly craues
 For helpe of fpirits in their fleeping graues,

12 As he that calde to *Shakefpeare, Iohnfon, Greene,*
 To write of their dead noble Queene ;
 But he that made the Ballads of oh hone,¹
 Did wondrous well to whet the buyer on :

16 Thefe fellows are the flauderers of the time,
 Make ryming hatefull through their baftard rime.
 But were I made a iudge in poetry,
 They all fhould burne for their vilde herefie.

¹ Mr W. Chappell believes that the Erse and Gaelic exclamation *O hone!* was first introduced in English Ballads after the execution of the Earl of Essex. One of the charges against him was that of disloyalty in his administration of Ireland. A contemporary ballad says,

Would God he ne'er had Ireland known
 Nor fet one foot on Flanders ground. (Rox. Bal. I. p. 573, ll. 1, 2.)
 This ballad opens with an appeal to the Irish to join in bewailing his untimely death :
 All you that cry *O hone! O hone!*
 Come now and fing *O hone!* with me.

O hone, Och hone, or Ochone, i. e. alas! is still sung to music by the Irish and the Scotch. One of Wilson's most effective songs was the dirge on the Glencoe massacre, called *Ochone Ochri Oh!* Another ballad with the burden *O Hone* was printed by Mr W. Chappell in his *Popular Music*, vol. i. p. 370. Its date is 1670—1680.

Franklin, my loyal friend, O hone, O hone!
 In whom my joys do end, O hone, O hone!
 Franklin, my heart's delight,
 Since last he took his flight,
 Bids now the world good-night,
 O hone, O hone!

The title of the original ballad is, says Mr Chappell, "A mournful Caral : Or an Elegy lamenting the tragical ends of two unfortunate faithful Lovers, Franklin and Cordelius : he being slain, she slew herself with her dagger. To a new tune called *Franklin is fled away*." Black-letter. Printed for M. Coles, T. Vere, J. Wright, J. Clarke, W. Thackeray, and T. Passinger. Six stanzas in the first, and 8 in the second part. Copies of this ballad are in the Pepys Collection, ii. 76; the Roxburghe, ii. 348; the Bagford, 643, m. 10, p. 69; and the Douce, fol. 222. As E. Elde printed *Palladis Palatium* in 1604, Ben Jonson's *Sejanus* in 1605, and many other books up to 1622, the date of I. C.'s *Epigram* may be any time within that period : but on internal evidence we should place it very early.

Gabriel Harvey's Third Letter,
 from
 "FOVRE LETTERS,
 and certaine Sonnets :

*Especially touching Robert Greene, and other parties,
 by him abused :*

But incidently of diverse excellent persons,
 and some matters of note,

To all courteous mindes, that will vouchsafe the reading.



LONDON
 Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe
 1592."

(pages. 15—50.)

The Third Letter.

To every Reader, fauourable, or indifferently affected.

4 **A**lbeit for these twelue, or thirteene yeares, no man hath bene
 more loth, or more scrupulous, then myselfe, to vnderlie the
 censure of euery curious conceite, or rigorous iudgement, that
 pretendeth a deepe insight in the perfections of wits and stiles, inso-
 much that euen Actions of Silence and Patience haue bene com-
 8 menced against me: and although I stil dwel in the same opinion, that
 nothing would be committed to a publike view, that is not exactly
 laboured both for matter and maner: and that importeth not some
 notable vse, to one, or other effec[t]uall purpose: Yet partlie the
 12 vehemente importunity of some affectionate friends, and partly mine
 owne tender regard of my fathers, and my brothers good reputation,
 haue so forcibly ouer-ruled me, that I haue finally condescended to
 their passionate motion: and in an extraordinarie case, haue respect-
 16 iuely yeelded my consent to an extraordinary course. Which I would
 vnpartially commend to the reasonable allowance of euery indiferent
 peruser that carrieth Courtesie in his Tongue, or honesty in his Hart.
 For mine own iniury, the more I consider, the lesse I estimate the
 20 fame: as one born to suffer, & made to contemne iniuries. He that
 in his youth flattered not himselfe with the exceeding commendations
 of some greatest schollers in the worlde: cannot at these yeares, either
 be discouraged with misreporte, or daunted with misfortune. A pre-
 24 meditate, & resolute minde lightly shaketh off the heauiest crosses of
 malice, and easely passeth ouer a thousande grieuances with a smile.
 Some haue learned of Reason, some of Philosophy, some of History,
 some of Diuinitie, some of Experience, some of all, to endure patiently,
 28 whatsoeuer befalleth, & euen to make the cruellest paine pleasant, as
 some make the swetest pleasure painefull. I had rather name *Titius*,

or *Sempronius*, then my selfe: But the vrgent entreaty of friends, and your eager expectation haue suddainely obtained that, which no personall empeachment, or real enforcement could in many yeres extort. Howbeit I shall hardly content them, to satisfie you: that 4 am neither to offend any, but in case of notoriety: nor to defend my selfe, but in case of necessity, or honesty. If anie haue charged mee, or do charge mee with insufficiency, I confesse: perfection is no common gifte: if with ignorance, I graunt: many seeme, fewe are, 8 learned: if with simplicitie, I yeeld: wondrous wittes are rare birdes: if with ill-lucke, I deny not: good lucke is not euerie mans lotte: yet who euer hearde me complaine of ill-lucke, or once say, *Fortune my Foe*? But in the plainnesse of my nature, and simplicitie 12 of my Arte, I can easely defie the proudest, that dareth cal my credite in question: or accuse me of any dishonest, or scandalous parte, either in deede, or in word. Many thinges are made offensue in the handling, that are tollerable inough in their owne nature: or fie on an 16 odious circumstance, where the substance it selfe might be more gracious. Letters may bee priuately written, that would not bee publicly diulged: I was then yong in years, fresh in courage, greene in experience, and as the manner is, somewhat ouerweeninge in conceit: and for varietie of study, and some deeper intelligence in the affayres of the worlde, otherwhiles reading inuectiues, and Satyres, artificially amplified in the most exaggerate and hyperbolicall kinde, I coulde hardlye refraine from discoueringe some little part of my reading: I had curiously laboured some exact, and exquisite poyntes of studie and practise, and greatly misliked the preposterous and vntoward courses of diuers good wits, ill directed; there wanted not some sharpe vnderferued discourtesies to exasperate my mind: shall I touch the 28 vlcet? it is no such mysterye, but it may be reuealed: I was supposed not vnmeet for the Oratorship of the vniuersity, which in that springe of mine age, for my Exercise, and credite, I earnestly affected: but mine owne modeest petition, my friendes diligent labour, our high 32 Chancelors most-honourable and extraordinarye commendation, were all peltingly defeated, by a flye practise of the olde Fox: whose acts, and monumentes shal neuer dye: some like accidents of dislike, for breuity I ouerflip: young bloud is hot: youth hasty: ingenuity open: 36

abufe impatiente: cholere stomachous: temptations bufie: the In-
 uectiue vaine, a flurring, and tickeling vaine: the Satyricall humour,
 a puffinge, and fwelling humor: Conceit penneth, leifure perufeth,
 4 and Curtefy commendeth many needlefle difcourfes: Idleneffe, the
 greateft Author and variableft Reader in the world: fome familiar
 friendes pricked me forward: and I, neither fearing daunger, nor
 fufpecting ill meafure, (poore credulitie fone beguiled) was not
 8 vnwilling to content them, to delight a few other and to auenge, or
 fatisfie my felfe, after the manner of fhrewes, that cannot otherwise
 eafe their curft hearts, but by their owne tongues, & their neigh-
 bours eares. Signor Immerito (for that name will be remembred)
 12 was then, and is ftill, my affectionate friend, one that could very wel
 abide Gascoignes Steele glaffe, and that ftoode equallie indifferent to
 either part of the ftate Demo[n]ftratiue: many communications and
 writings may fecretlie paffe betweene fuch, euen for an exercife of
 16 fpeech and ftile, that are not otherwife conuenient to be difclofed:
 it was the finifter hap of thofe infortunate Letters, to fall into the left
 handes of malicious enemies, or vndifcreete friends: who aduentured
 to imprint in earnest, that was fcribled in ieft, (for the moody fit was
 20 foone ouer:) and requited their priuate pleaſure with my publike dif-
 pleaſure: oh my ineſtimable, and infinite difpleaſure. When there
 was no remedie, but melancholy patience: and the ſharpeſt parte of
 thofe vn lucky Letters had bene ouer read at the Councell Table: I
 24 was aduifed by certaine honourable, and diuers worſhipfull perſons,
 to interpretate my intention in more expreſſe termes: and thereupon
 difcourſed euerie particularitie, by way of Articles or Poſitions, in a
 large Apology of my duetiful, and entier affection to that flouriſhing
 28 Vniuerſitie, my deere Mother: which Apology, with not ſo few as
 forty ſuch Academicall Exercifes, and fundry other polititique Dif-
 courſes, I haue hitherto ſuppreſſed, as vnworthie the view of the
 bufie world, or the entertainment of precious Time: but perad-
 32 uenture theſe extraordinarie prouocations may worke extraordinarie
 in me; and though not in paſſion, yet in conceit, ſturme me vp, to
 publiſh many Traictees, and Difcourſes, that in certaine conſiderations
 I meant euer to conceale, and to Dedicate vnto none, but vnto
 36 obſcure Darkeneſſe, or Famous Vulcane. It were pittie, but won-

derous wits (giue enemies their due) shoulde become more woonderous by comparifon, conference maketh excellent things appeare more admirable: & I am fo far from being a Saturnift by nature, or a Stoick by difcipline, that I can eafily frame a certaine pleafurable 4 delight vnto my felfe, by miniftring fome matter vnto them, that now are faine to make fome thing of nothing: and wittily to plaie with their own fhadowes. It goeth fomewhat hard in my harfh Legend, when the father of Muficke muft be mocked, not Tubulcain, as he 8 miftearmeth him, but Tuball, whom Genefis voutfafeth honourable mention: and the Hexameter verfe flouted: whereof neither Homer in Greeke, nor Virgill in Latine, (how valorous Autors?) nor Alexander in conqueft, nor Auguftus in maiefty (how puiffaunt Princes?) 12 were afhamed: but accompted it the onely gallant trompet of braue, and Heroicall Acts; and I wis, the Englifh is nothing too-good to imitat the Greeke, or Latine, or other eloquent Languages, that honour the Hexameter, as the foueraigne of verfes, and the high 16 Controwler of Rimes. If I neuer deferue anye better remembraunce, let mee rather be Epitaphed, The Inuentour of the Englifh Hexameter: whome learned M. Stanihurft imitated in his Virgill, and excellent Sir Phillip Sidney difdained not to follow in his Arcadia, & 20 elfewhere, then be chronicled, The greene maifter of the Blacke Arte: or the founder of vgly oathes: or the father of misbegotten *Infortunatus*: or the Scriuener of Crofbiters: or as one of his owne fectaries termed him, the Patriarch of shifters. Happy man I, if thefe 24 two be my hainoufeft crimes, and deadlieft finnes, To bee the Inuentour of the Englifh Hexameter, and to bee orderlie clapt in the Fleete for the forefaide Letters: where he that fawe me, fawe mee at Conftantinople. Indeede Sir James Croft (whome I neuer touched with 28 the leaft tittle of detractions) was cunningly incensed, and reincident againft mee: but at laft pacified by the voluntarie mediation of my honourable fauourers, M. Secretary Wilfon, and Sir Walter Mildmay: vnrequested by any line of my hand, or any woord of my mouth. 32 Neither did I otherwife follicite, or intreate Sir Iames, till I had affured notice of his better fatisfaction: when I writte vnto him, as became mee, in refpectiue, and duetifull forte: not for feare of any daunger, but for loue of honourable fauour. Which Letters, albeit 36

not so ceremoniouslie pleasing, as effectually contenting, the wife
 knight not onely receiued courteously, but accepted fauourable, and
 commended honourablye : and for my selfe, earnestly affirmed, I was
 4 first wronged by other, and then mistaken by him : but now found
 another man, then I was supposed. As for my olde Controwler,
 Doctor Perne (for he indeed was the man, that otherwhiles flattered
 me exceedingly, otherwhiles ouerthwarted me crossly, alwaies plaid
 8 fast, and loose with me) he was old enough, to aunswere for him-
 selfe, and should not bee defended by him. Onely he wished me to
 proceede louingly with the Vniuersity, howsoever I dealt with that
 Doctor. And that was all the Fleeting, that euer I felt : sauing that
 12 an other company of speciall good fellowes, (whereof he was none of
 the meanest, that brauely threatned to coniure-vpp one, which should
 maffacre Martins witt, or should bee lambackd himself with ten
 yeares prouision) would needs forsooth verye courtly perswade the
 16 Earle of Oxforde, that some thing in those Letters, and namely the
 Mirrour of Tuscanismo, was palpably intended against him : whose
 noble Lordeship I protest, I neuer meante to dishonour with the least
 preiudicial word of my Tongue, or pen : but euer kept a mindefull
 20 reckoning of many bounden duties toward The-same : since in the
 prime of his gallantest youth, hee bestowed Angels vpon mee in
 Christes Colledge in Cambridge, and otherwise voutsafed me many
 gracious fauours at the affectionate commendation of my Cousen, M.
 24 Thomas Smith, the sonne of Sir Thomas, shortly after Colonel of the
 Ardes in Ireland. But the noble Earle, not disposed to trouble his
 Iouiall mind with such Saturnine paltery, stil continued, like his
 magnificent selfe : and that Fleeting also proued, like the other : a filly
 28 bullbeare, a sorry puffe of winde, a thing of nothing. But a strong
 imagination pierceth deeply : and the Paper Fleete will not bee so
 aunswered. Iesu, what would such notable fellowes write, or rather
 would they not write, if they could probably say, or fantastically
 32 furmize by me, as I can evidently proue by them ? But I seeke not
 the condemnation of the deade, or the disgrace of the liuing : but the
 good amendement of the one, by the naughty example of the other.
 And for mine own farther iustification in the premisses, or otherwise :
 36 I had rather my larger writings and other actions should plead for

mee, than this, or any flighte Letter : wherein I am not to infourme pregnant conceits, that may imagine more by a little : or to adresse any peece of mine own history, though wiser men in case of vn-worthy reproch, haue not made nice to vndertake their owne 4 defence, and euen to labour their owne commendation. The plausible Examples of Tully, Cato, Marius, Scipio, diuers such vertuous Romanes, and fundry excellent Greekes, are famously knownen : but not greatly fit for euery mannes imitation. Were other of my dispo- 8 sition, small time should be lost in auenging, or debating verball iniuries, especially to my selfe : who can verie well suffer poore spite, to shoote at mee, and to hitte himselfe : and sometime smile at the silly flie, that will needs martyr it selfe in my candle. But me thinkes, 12 the wildest head, and desperate mind should consider : they that speake it must not looke to heare well : the worlde is not giuen to pocket vp infamies : who cannot returne-home a Quippe, or requite one libell with an other ? nothing more common in bookes, or more 16 readye in mouthes, than the Inuectiue vaine, and the whole Arte of railing : some schollers haue choyce of nimble pennes, & smooth tongues at commandement : & there was a time, when paradventure I coulde speake with them, that talked we me. Though the case be 20 altered : and I now, none of the hastiest to striue for those bucklers : yet a general, a special, a glowing, a piercing indignitie may rekindle some little sparkes of courage, and affection wil be affection, though not in proper reuenge, yet the common duetie, I am not to dispute 24 the nature of Force, or the force of nature, who knoweth not, how violentlie force prouoketh force : or how mightilie nature worketh in compatible natures ? But how far publike obiections, or famous imputations require publike aunswers : or how insufficient the formal- 28 left Iudiciall remedie in any one Court, may seeme, in case of a printed diffamation, that with the winges of Mallice in some, of Enuie in more, and of Leuity in most, flieth through the Realme, and ouer the Sea : bee it indifferentlie decided by euerie discrete 32 iudgement, or reasonable consideration. Especially when the guiltie part is deceafed : and the iniury not the lesse, but the more notorious. The best is, the persons abused, are not altogether vnknownen, they haue not so euell a neighbour, that euer reade, or hearde those oppro- 36

brious villanies (it is too-mild a name, for my brother Richardes most
 abhominable Legend, who frameth himfelfe to liue as chaftefly, as the
 leawde writer affected to liue beaftly) but hath presentlie broken out
 4 into fome fuch earnest, or more passionate speeches: *ô* pestilent
 knauery, who euer heard fuch arrant forgeries, and ranke lies? A
 mad world, where fuch shamefull stuffe is bought, and fould: and
 where fuch roisterly Varlets may be suffered to play vpon whome
 8 they lust, and how they lust: Is this *Greene* with the running Head,
 and the scribling Hand, that neuer linnes putting-forth new, newer,
 & neweft bookes of the maker? If his other bookes bee as holefome
 geere, as this, no maruaile, though the gay-man conceiue trimlie of
 12 himfelfe, and statelye scorne all befide. *Green*, vile *Greene*, would
 thou wearest halfe fo honest, as the worst of the foure, whom thou
 vpbraidest: or halfe so learned, as the vnlearnedst of the three.
 Thanke other for thy borrowed & filched plumes of some little
 16 Italianated brauery: & what remaineth, but flat Impudencie, and
 grosse Detraction: the proper ornaments of thy sweete vtterance? I
 alleadge not mine owne inuentions, (who cannot forget the two
 Athenian Temples of Impudencie, and Calummie, when I remember
 20 him:) I could nominate the Gentlemen, and substantiall Yeoman,
 Gentlemens fellowes, that vttered much more by his life, and can
 hardlie forbear him since his death: and who of acquaintance with him,
 or them, whome hee depraueth, could either partiallie excuse the one,
 24 or reasonable accuse the other? Their liues effectually speake for
 themfelues: and he that liued not, to see nine and twentie yeares,
 died not, till the Vniuersitie of Cambridge had bestowed vpon him a
 grace to bee a Doctour of his facultie, and till hee was reputed in
 28 Northfolke, where he practised phisicke, a proper toward man, and as
 skilfull a Phisition for his age, as euer came there: how well beloved
 of the chiefeft Gentlemen, and Gentlewomen in that Shire, them-
 felues testifie. That is gone to Heauen, cannot bee recouered on
 32 Earth: it is our comfort, that he liued in good credite, and died in
 good minde. I must euer remember some of his notable sayings (for
 in deede so they were): and can neuer forget that sweete voice of
 the dying Cignet; *ô frater, Christus est optimus Medicus, & meus*
 36 *solus Medicus. Vale Galene, valete humanæ Artes: nihil diuinum in*

terris, præter animum aspirantem ad cælos. That best and his onelie
 Phifition knoweth, what spiritual phificke I commended vnto him,
 when I beheld in his meager and ghaftly countenance, that I cannot
 rehearse without some fit of compaffion. Wee must in order follow 4
 him, that shoulde in nature haue gone before him, and I know not
 by what destinie, hee followed him first, that foled him last. How
 he departed, his ghostly mother Ifam, can truliest, and will fauourab-
 liest report: how he liued, London remembreth. Oh, what a 8
 liuelie picture of Vanity? but oh what a deadlie Image of miserie?
 And oh what a terrible Caueat for such & such? I am not to exten-
 uate or preiudice his wit, which could not any way be great, though
 fom way not the least of our vulgar writers & mani-waies very 12
 vngracious: but who euer esteemed him either wise, or learned, or
 honest, or anyway credible? how many Gentlemen, and other say of
 him? Let the paltry fellow go: Lord, what a lewde Companion
 was hee? What an egregious makefhift, Where should Conny- 16
 catchers haue gotten such a Secretarie: How shal cofenage do for a
 new Register: or Phantasticalitye for a new Autor? They wronge
 him much with their Epitaphes, and other solemne deuifes, that
 entitle him not at the least, The second Toy of London; the Stale of 20
 Poules, the Ape of Euphuus, the Vice of the Stage, the mocker of the
 simple world: the flowter of his friendes, the Foe of himfelfe: and
 fo forth. What durst not hee vtter with his tongue: or diuulge
 with his Penne: or countenance with his face? Or whome cared 24
 hee for, but a carelesse crewe of his own associates? Peruse his
 famous bookes: and in steede of, *Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit*
utile dulci (that forfooth was his professed Poesie) Loe a wilde head,
 ful of mad braine and a thousand crochets: a Scholler, a Discourfer, 28
 a Courtier, a ruffian, a Gamester, a Louer, a Souldier, a Trauailer,
 Merchaunt, a Broker, an Artificer, a Botcher, a Petti-fogger, a Plaver,
 a Coofener, a Rayler, a beggar, an Omnigatherum, a Gay-nothing:
 a Stoarehouse of bald and baggage stufte, vnwoorth the aunfwering, or 32
 reading: a Triuiall, and triobular Autor for knaues, & fooles: an
 Image of Idlenes: an Epitome of fantasticalitie: a Mirroure of
 Vanitie: *Vanitas Vanitatum, & omnia vanitas.* Alasse, that anie
 shoulde say, as I have heard diuers affirme: His witte was nothing, 36

but a minte of knauerie: himselfe a deuifer of iugling feates: a forger
 of couetous practises: an Inuentour of monstuous oathes: a derider
 of all religions: a contemner of God, and man: a desperate Lucian-
 4 ift: an abominable Aretinift: an Arch-Athieft: and he arch-de-
 ferued to be well hanged feauen yeares agoe. Twenty, and twentie
 fuch familiar fpeeches I ouer paffe: and bury the whole Legendary
 of his Life, & Death, in the Sepulchre of eternall Silence. I will not
 8 condemne, or cenfure his workes, which I neuer did fo much as
 superficially ouer-runne, but as fome fewe of them occurfiully pre-
 fented themfelues in Stationers shops, and fome other houfes of my
 acquaintance. But I pray God, they haue not done more harme by
 12 corruption of manners, then good by quickening of witte: and I
 would, fome Buyers had either more Reafon to difcerne, or leffe
 Appetite to defire fuch Nouels. The world is full inough of
 fooleries: though the humor be not feasted with fuch luxurious, and
 16 riotous Pamphlets. Howe vnlike *Tullies* fweete Offices: or *Ifocrates*
 pithy instructions: or *Plutarches* holefome Morrals: or the dilicate
 Dialogues of *Xenophon*, and *Plato*: or the fage Tragedies of *Sophocles*,
 and *Euripides*: or the fine Comedies of the dainietift Atticke wittes,
 20 or other excellent monumentes of antiquity, neuer fufficientlie perused?
 Yet the one as stale, as oldeft fashions: and what more freshly current
 for a while, then the other? Euen *Guicciardines* filuer Historie, and
Arioflos golden Cantoes, grow out of request: & the Counteffe of
 24 *Pembrookes* Arcadia is not greene inough for queafie stomackes, but
 they muft haue *Greenes* Arcadia: and I beleeeue, moft eagerlie longed
 for *Greenes* Faerie Queene. O ftraunge fancies: ô monstuous new-
 fangledneffe. The wittier fort tafteft, & flieth: as the Dog from
 28 Nilus: other wantons find Experience the miftris of fooles: and need
 no other pennance but their owne repentaunce. The verie Time
 confuteth Vanitie: and the verie place requireth fobrietie. No
 publike fecurity without priuate moderation: and the more bondes of
 32 gouernment, the more indefeafible affurance. Due Circumfpection may
 do much good, and an abundant Cautele can do little hurt. Youth
 is youth: & age corruptible: better an hundred Ouides were banifhed,
 then the ftate of Auguftus endangered, or a foueraigne Empire
 36 infected. Efppecially in a tumultuous age, and in a world of warre:

wherein not Bacchus, but Mars : not Venus, but Mercury ; not Ryot,
 but Valour ; not Phanfy, but Pollicy, muſt ſtrike the ſtroke. Gallant
 Gentlemen, be-thinke your felues of the olde Romane Diſcipline, and
 the newe Spaniſh induſtry : and I am not to trouble you with any 4
 other accuſation of them, that condemne themſelues, and neede no
 other ſhame, or puniſhment, but their own woorkes. Onely I requeſt
 ſome buſy pennes to ſtay their wiſedomes : and either to publiſh a
 iuſtifiable truth, or to conceale their bad diſpoſition. Woe to that 8
 ſtudy, that miſpendeth pretious Time, and conſumeth it ſelf, in need-
 leſſe, and bootleſſe quarrels. Compariſons, they ſay, are odious : but
 Inuectiues more odious : & what ſo abhominable, as forged &
 ſuborned calumnies ? One, or two miſerable examples may ſtand for 12
 an hundred : I will not aggrauate or diſcourſe particulars : A pitiful
 caſe, that ſuch luſty beginnings ſhould haue ſuch ſorry ends : and
 who can tell, what dowty yoonker may next gnaſh with his teeth ?
 Terrible Creatures, and the curſt Cowe, haue ſometime ſhort hornes. 16
 The wildeſt Colte is ſoone tamed : and be like neither Death, nor
 Shame, nor Miſery are affraid of them, that vaunt themſelues, Like
 vnto Death, and Will Sommer, in ſparing none. God helpe, and
 Charity pittie them, that haue neither habilitie to help, nor witt to pitie 20
 themſelues : but will needs try a concluſion betweene their heads,
 and the next wall. I haue heard of Gyants in conceit, and Pigmeis
 in performance : yong Phaetons, younge Icarie, young Choræbi, and
 I ſhall ſay young Babingtons, and how many millions of greene 24
 youthes, haue in ouermounting, moſt ruefully diſmounted, and left
 behinde them full-lamentable Hiſtories ? For the very mention of
 ſome direfull Tragedies, were horrible, and what ſo wretched, as head-
 long enterpriſes : or ſo hideous, as the deſperate attempt of Impoſſi- 28
 bilities ? *Philoſtratus* in his Icones, pleaſurably reporteth, according to
 to the tradition of Greeke Poets, how on a time, A reſolute bande of
 dowty Pigmie, triumphantly marched to inuade *Hercules* aſleepe.
 Woe to ſuch braue adventures. *Æſops* Toade, A proud aſpiring 32
 Creature, ſhamefullie ouermatched her ſwelling, and burſten ſelfe.
 Great, and ſmall things may in ſome proportion be compared together ;
 and beholde as miſerable a ſpectacle, in their kinde. Flouriſhing *M.*
Greene is moſt-wofully faded, and whileſt I am bemoaning his ouer- 36

pittious decay; & discourfing the vfuall fucceffe of fuch ranke wittes,
 Loe, all on the fuddaine, his fworne brother, M. *Pierce Penni-leffe*,
 (ftill more paltery, but what remedy? we are already ouer fhoes and
 4 muft now goe through) Loe his inwardeft companion, that tafted of
 the fatall herringe, cruelly pinched with want, vexed with difcredite,
 tormented with other mens felicitie, and ouerwhelmed with his owne
 mifery; in a raving, and franticke moode, moft desperately exhibiteth
 8 his fupplication to the Diuell. A ftrange title, an od wit, and a mad
 hoorefon, I warrant him: doubtles it wil proue fome dainty deuife,
 queintly contriued by way of humble Supplication To the high and
 mighty Prince of Darkeneffe: not Dunfically botched-vp, but right-
 12 formally conueied, according to the ftile, and tenour of Tarletons pre-
 fident, his famous play of the feauen Deadly finnes: which moft-
 dea[d]ly, but moft liuely playe, I might haue feene in London: and
 was verie gently inuited thereunto at Oxford, by *Tarleton* himfelfe, of
 16 whome I merrily demaunding, which of the feauen, was his owne
 deadlie finne, he bluntly aunfwered after this manner; By God, the
 finne of other Gentlemen, Lechery. Oh but that, M. *Tarleton*, is not
 + your part vpon the ftage, you are too-blame, that diffemble with the
 20 world & haue one part for your friends pleafure, an other for your
 owne. I am fomewhat of Doctour Pernes religion, quoth he: and
 abruptlie tooke his leaue. Surely it muft needes bee current in
 matter, and autential in forme, that had firft fuch a learned prefident:
 24 and is now pleafantlie interlaced with diuers new-founde phrafes of
 the Tauerne: and patheticallie intermixt with fundry dolefull
 pageantes of his own ruinous & beggerlie experience. For the poore
 Tennement of his Purfe, (quoth himfelfe, gramercy good *Tarleton*)
 28 hath bene the Diuels Dauncing fchoole, anie time this halfe yeare,
 and I pray God, (quoth another) the poore Tennement of his Heart,
 hath not alfo bene the Diuels Fencing Schoole, twife as long. Par-
 ticulars, and Circumftances are tedious, efpecially in forrowfull, and
 32 forlorne caufes, the fumme of fummes is. He toft his imagination a
 thoufand waies, and I beleeuue, fearched euery corner of his Grammer-
 fchoole witte, (for his margine is as deepele learned, as *Faufte precor*
gelida) to fee if he coulde finde anie meanes to relieue his eftate, but
 36 all his thoughtes, and marginal notes, confortd to his conclufion.

That the worlde was vncharitable, and he ordained to be miserable. It were cruelty, to ad affliction to affliction: what flintly Heart would not sigh or rather melt, to heare the bewailefull moane of that fobbing, and groaning Muse, the daughter of most-pregnant but most-wretched *Niobe*?

*Why ist damnation, to despaire, and die,
When Life is my true happines disease?*

And a little after:

8

*Diuines, and dying men may talke of Hell:
But in my Heart, her feuerall tormentes dwell.*

And so forth most-hideouflie.

For the Text is much more dolefull, then the Gloffe: and who ¹² woulde not be moued with more pittifull compunctiō, to heare the lamentable Farewell.

*England adieu, the soile that brought me forth:
Adieu vnkinde, where Skill is nothing worth:*

16

Then to read that profound Quotation,

Heu mihi, quam paucos hæc mea dicta mouent?

Which was thought Patheticall out of crie.

*Forgiue him God, although he curse his Birth,
Since Miserie hath dawnted all his Mirth.*

20

Now good sweete Muse, I beseech thee by thy delicate witte, and by all the queintest Inuentions of thy deuifeful braine, cast not thy drearie selfe headlong into the horrible Gulph of Desperation: but ²⁴ being a Creature of so singular, and wonderfull hope, as thy inspired courage diuinelie suggesteth, and still reare-vp mountaines of highest Hope: and either gallantlie aduance thy vertuous self, maugre Fortune: (what impossible to aspiring industry?) or mightilie enchant ²⁸ some magnificent Mecœnas, (for thou canst doe it) to honour himselfe in honouring thee; and to blisse the eies of the gazing worlde, with beholding those Miracles, which some round liberality, and thy super-

thankfull minde, would hugelie enable thee to worke. Let it neuer be said, that the Minion of the Muses, should forsake himself, or abandon them, whose very shadowes he adareth. A braue Hart, in 4 extreamest distresse, neuer languisheth: no such affrighting Death, or gnawing Hell, as the deuouring Abyffe of dispaire. Yet better a man without money, then money without a man: Penniless is not his purse but his minde: not his reuenue, but his resolution: A man is a 8 man though he haue but a hose vpon his head: for euerie curse, there is a blessing; for euerie malady, a remedie; for euerie winter, a sommer: for euerie night a day, a dog hath a day.

Nocta pluit tota: redeunt spectacula manè.

12 Right magnanimitie neuer droupeth, sweet Musike requickeneth the heauiest spirites of dumpish Melancholy: fine Poetry abhorreth the loathsome, and vgly shape of forlorne pensiuenes: what gentle minde detesteth not curfed, and damnable desperation? All abiect doleful-
 16 nes, is woefully base, and baselie woefull. The die, the ball, the sponge, the fiue, the wheele of Fortune, Fortune hirselfe, a trifle, a iest, a toy in Philosophy, & diuine resolution. Be a Musitian, & Poet vnto thy self, that art both, and a Ringleader of both, vnto
 20 other; be a Man, be a Gentleman, be a Philosopher, be a Diuine, be thy resolute selfe; not the Slaue of Fortune, that for euerie fleabiting crieth out-alas, & for a few hungry meales, like a Greeke Parasite, misuseth the Tragedy of Hecuba: but the friend of Vertue, that is
 24 richest in pouerty, freest in bondage, brauest in ieopardie, cheerefullest in calamitie, be rather wise, and vnfortunate, with the siluer Swanne, then fortunate & vnwise, with the golden Ass: remember thine owne
 + marginal Embleme, *Fortuna fauet fatuis*. Oh, solace thy miraculous
 28 selfe, and cheere the Muses in cheering thy daintie soule, sweetelie drunken with their delitious Helicon, and the restoratiue Nectar of the Gods. What can I say more? That cordial liquor, and that heauenly restoratiue, bee thy soueraigne comfort: and scorne the
 32 basenes of euerie crased, or fainting thought, that may argue a degenerate minde. And so much briefly touching thy deere selfe: whome I hope neuer to finde so pathetically distressed, or so Tragically disguised againe.

Now a word, or two concerning him, who in charitie kiffeth thy hand, and in pitie wifheth thee better lucke. May it please gentle Pierce, in the diuine fury of his rauifhed spirite, to be graciouſlie good vnto his poore friendes, who would be ſomewhat loath, to be filly 4 ſheepe for the wolfe, or other ſheepe-biter: I dare vndertake, the abuſed Autor of the Astrologically diſcourſe, (euerie page thereof, vnder correction of inſpired and ſupernaturall conceits, diſcouereth more Arte, and Iudgement, then the whole Supplication of the Parturient 8 Mountaine) notwithstanding the notorious Diabolicall diſcourſe of the ſaide *Pierce*, a man better acquainted with the Diuels of Hell, then with the Starres of Heauen: ſhall vnſainedly pray for him: and onely pray him to report the knowen truth, of his approued learning, & 12 liuing, without fauor. Otherwiſe, it were not greatlie amiſſe, a little to conſider, that he, which in the ruſſe of his freſheſt iouility, was ſaine to cry, *M. Churchyard*, a mercy in printe, may be orderlie driuen to crie more peccauiques, then one. I would thinke the Counter, *M. 16 Churchyard*, his hoſtiſſe *Penia*, and ſuch other ſenſible Leſſons, might ſufficientlie haue taught him, that *Pennileſſe* is not Lawleſſe: and that a Poets or Painters Licence, is a poore ſecurity, to priuiledge debt, or diffamacion. I woulde wiſh the burned child not to forget 20 the hot Element: and would aduiſe ouer-weening youthes, to remember themſelues, and the good auncient oracle of ſage *Apollo*. There is a certaine thing, called Modeſtie, if they could light vpon it: and by my younge Maſters leaue, ſome pritty ſmacke of diſcretion would 24 reliſh well. The Athenians were noted for lauiſh ampliſieng, the Cretenſians for craftie lying, the Theſſalians for ſubtle cogging: the Carthaginians for deceitfull perſidie: *Hanniball*, *Fabius*, *Agathocles*, *Iphicrates*, *Vliſſes*, and a thouſand ſuch, for counterfeit pollicie, but 28 all their forgeries were ſeaſoned with the ſalt of probabilitie, & onelie vſed at occaſions of aduantage: and although the Grecians generallie were ouer-lightheaded, and vaine-ſpoken, yet their leuitie fauored of elegant wittineſſe, and the flying birde carried meate in the mouth. 32 Euen Lucians true Tales are ſpiced with conceite: and neither his, nor Apuleius *Aſſe*, is altogether an *Aſſe*. It is a piece of cunning in the moſt fabulous Legends, to interlace ſome credible narrations, & verie probable occurrences, to countenance and authorize the exceſſiue 36

licentiousness of the rest. Unreasonable fictions palpably bewray
 their odious grossness: and hee that will be a famous deuiser in
 folio, must be content with the reward of a notable Lier, not to be
 4 credited, when he auoweth a trueth. The pleasant man talketh of a
 Batchelors hoode, turned ouer his eares, for abusing of Aristotle: an
 imagineth goodlie matters of casting the Heauens water: of anatom-
 8 bawd of those celestial bodies: how Saturne, & Jupiter proued
 honest men, then al the world took them for: o braue Tarlton
 thou wert hee, when all is done, had not Aretine bene Aretine, when
 he was, vndoubtedlie thou hadst bene Aretine, gramercy capricious,
 12 and transcendent witte, the onelie high Pole Artique, and deepe
 Minerall of an incomparable stile. Yet Tarltons Iests not sufficient:
 but Roscius must haue his Stale, to make him more admirable: al
 were nothing, vnlesse Eldertons ale-crammed nose, had bene con-
 16 fumed to nothing, in beare-baiting him, with whole bundels of
 ballats: that forsooth is not so good a gentleman, (for euery heire of
 a Nash is a good gentleman at the least as the heard of Thomas Nash,
 the maister butler of Pembroke Hal whose graue countenance, like
 20 Cato able to make him runne out of his wittes for feare, if he looke
 sternely vpon him, and I wot not what, and what trumperie else, as
 childish, & garish stufte, as euer came in print, yet what packe of
 vanity is not in print, I will not cry, Absurde, Absurde: as hee madly
 24 exclaimeth, Monstrous, Monstrous: But who in that Vniuersity can
 deny, but M. Haruey read the publike Philosophie Lecture with special
 good liking, and many will say with singular commendation, when
 this mightie lashing Gentleman (now well read in the late exploits
 + 28 of Vntruffe, and for Tarletons amplifications A per se A) was not so
 much as *idoneus auditor ciuilibus scientiæ*. What hee is improued since,
 excepting his good olde *Flores Poetarum*, and Tarletons surmounting
 Rhetorique, with a little Euphuisme, and Greeneffe inough, which
 32 were all prettily stale, before he put hand to penne. I report me to
 the fauourablest opinion of those that know his Prefaces, Rimes, and
 the very Timpanye of his Tarltonizing wit, his Supplication to the
 Diuell, oh that is the Diuell & al. I am so farre from doting vpon
 36 mine owne, or my Brothers Writinges, in any matter of moment,

that I vse to censure them with a more curious and rigorous iudgement, then I examine any thing else, wherein my eare is so loath to flatter me, & my conceit so affraid to cosen me, that my mind euer remaineth vnsatisfied, & nothing hitherto could fulfill my desire, 4
 insatiably couetous to do better. But as those perfunctorie Discourses are (which were more hastilie, then speedilie published without my priuity) let the best of them goe for wast paper, & serue the basest shops, if the worst of them importe not more publike, or 8
 priuate vse, then his gayest flower, that may thanke *Greene, & Tarlton* for his Garland. Were my brother, not my brother, but some familiar acquaintance, I might in Trueth, & should in Reason, make other comparifons, with applause inough: (for what indifferencie 12
 feeth not the differences, or what so silly, as he could make Pierce, with voice, or pen? notwithstanding those Miracles of the white rauē in the cloudes): But the Vniuersitie, the Cittie, the whole Realme, all good Learning, & ciuill Gouvernement, be their Iudge, & 16
 my mouth especially in this Martinish and Counter-martinish age: wherein the Spirit of Contradiction reigneth, and euerie one super-aboundeth in his owne humor, euen to the annihilating of any other, without rime, or reason. Some would bee Mutes, if they might bee 20
 suffered to be, as were meetest for them, and onelie to dwell in the excellentē monuments of diuine wittes whose sweet company they cannot enioy inough, but what is to be done, when vowels are coursed, & Mutes haunted, and that heauenlie conference hellishlie 24
 disturbed, God, or good Order, circumcise the Tongues, and Pennes, that flander without cause, and raile without effect, euen in the superlatiue degree of rauing. Aretine, and the Diuels Oratour might very-well bee spared in Christian, or Piliticke Common 28
 wealthes: which cannot want contagion inough, though they bee not poysoned with the venomous potions of Inckhorne witches. Fie plefant witt was euer commendable: and iudiciall accusation lawfull: but fie on grosse scurility, and impudent calumny: that wil rather 32
 goe to Hell in iest, then to heauen in earnest, and seeke not to reforme any vice, to backebite, and depraue euery person, that feedeth not their humorous fancy. A vile mind: and what a pestelenter villany? but some odd wittes forfooth, will needes bee accompted 36

† terrible Bull Beggars, and the onely Killcoves of their age; for how
 should they otherwise keepe the simple world in awe: or scare
 multitudes of plaine folke, like idiot crowes, and innocent dooues.
 4 All the Inuectiue, and Satyricall Spirites, are their Familiars: scoffing,
 and girding is their daily bread: other professe other faculties: they
 professe the Arte of railing: Noble, Reuerend, or whatfoeuer, al
 pefants, and clownes: gowty Diuels, and buckram Giants: Midasses,
 8 and golden Asses: Cormorants, and Drones; Dunces, and hypocriticall
 hoat spurres; Earth wormes, and Pinchefart Penny-fathers: that feede
 not their hungry purfes, and eager stomackes: they haue termes,
 quoth a maruellous doer, steeped in *Aqua Fortis*, and Gunnepouder,
 12 that shal rattle through the skies, and make Earthquakes in such
 pefauantes eares, as shall dare to sende them awaie with a flea in
 their eare: (howe might a man purchase the fight of those puiffant
 and hideous termes?) they can lash poore slaues, and spurgall Asses
 16 mightily; they can tell parlous Tales of Beares and Foxes, as shrewdly
 as mother Hubbard, for her life: they will dominiere in Tauernes,
 and Stationers shops, to die for 't: they will be as egregiously famous,
 as euer was *Herastratus*, or *Pausanias*, or *Kett*, or *Scoggin*: *Agrippa*,
 20 and *Rabelays* but Ciphers to them: they haue it onely in them.
 Would Christ, they had more discretion in them, and lesse rancour
 against other, that neuer wished them the least euill, but still beseech
 GOD to encrease the best, and to pardon the worst in them. The
 24 Quippe knoweth his rewarde, and the Supplication to the Diuell,
 exprefly dedicated to the Prince of Darkeness, I comitte to the cen-
 sure of Wisedome, and Iustice, with fauour: onely requesting that
 mightie Bombarder of termes, to spare quiet men that meane him no
 28 harme, and to keepe the huge maine shot of his ratling Babies for
 Buckrame Giants. Alasse, what should I touch their parents, or
 twit them by their other friendes: Let it be one of their iolities to
 offer, & one of our simplicities to suffer that iniury: which neither
 32 impairerh the reputation of the Father: nor abaseth the credite of the
 Sonnes: nor argueth any thing, but the impudente despightfulnesse of
 the Libeller. Fewe Sonnes haue felinger cause to loue, or reuerence,
 or defend their Fathers, then my selfe: but his dealing is such, where
 36 he tradeth: and his liuing such where he conuerseth, that he may

eaſely ſhame himſelfe, which goeth-about to ſhame him, or vs in him. I will not trouble you with the rehearfall of his inheritance, which I could haue wiſhed more then it was, yet was it more, by the fauour of that terrible Thunderſmith of termes, then the inheritances 4
of both their Fathers together. Put caſe, I haue inquired, what ſpeciall cauſe the Pennileſſe Gentleman hath, to bragge of his birth: which giueth the woefull poueretto good leaue, euen with his Stentors voice, & in his ratling terms, to reuiue the pittifull hiftorie of 8
Don Lazarello de Thoemes: to contend with colde, to conuerſe with ſcarcitie: to be laid-open to pouertie: to accuſe Fortune: to raile on his patrons, to bite his penne, to rend his papers, to rage in all points, like a mad man, to torment himſelfe in that agony a long time; to 12
be miſerable, to be *vacuus viator*: to haue *opus and uſus* knocking at his doore twenty times a weeke, when he is not within: to ſeek his dinner in poules with Duke humfrey: to licke diſhes, to be a 16
beggar.

To ban the Aire, wherein he breathes A wretch:

to be the Diuels diſtreſſed Orator, to proclaime his owne deſolate and abieſt eſtat, in theſe & ſuch other moſt-baſe, and ſhamefull complaints, ſcarcely beſeeming the rafcalleft fiſer in an Vniuerſity, or 20
the beggarlieſt mendicant frier in a country.

Forgiue him God, although he curſe his birth.

I, but who ſo exceſſiuely thankfull to his other friends? One kind freend, more worth then two vnfreendlie kinfemen. Affection will 24
relieue, where nature faileth; he muſt needes abound in deuoted and bountifull freendes, that ſheweth himſelfe ſo meritoriouſly freendlie, and ſo vnſpeakeably gratefull.

O friendes, no friendes that then vngentlie frowne, 28
When changing fortune caſts vs headlong downe.

I had nigh-hand ouer-ſkipped the learned allegation in the margine, ſolemnelly auouched with a very-patheticall Pol, *Pol me, occidiſtis Amici*. All which, and moſt of the Premiſſes, I had altogether 32
omitted, but that the two vnmeete Companions, a Lordes heart, and

a beggars purse must somewhat remember themselves, or be a little, as it were, pulled by the ragged sleeue. Young schollers can tel how Vlyffes handeled Irus, and olde Truants haue not altogether forgot-
 4 ten, howe sawfie the Harpies were, till they were interteined accord-
 ingly. But what though the decayed Gentleman, so commendeth
 his owne woorthfull birth, and trusty freendes? Many noble
 Houses haue seene their own ruines: and sometime the brothers of
 8 the Prodigall Sonne, will not stick to curse, wher they should
 reuerently bleffe. The Table-fellow of Duke Humfrey, & Tantalus,
 might learne of him to curse Iupiter, and to ban not onely the four
 Elementes, but also the seauen Planets, and euen the twelue houses
 12 of Heauen. And what though the other sorry Magnifico, as very a
 + Bifonian, as he for hys life, would sweare in a brauery, his Father
 was of foure & twenty religions: and himselfe a Diuine from his
 mothers womb: an Image of both Churches, & both Synagogues
 16 too: a naturall Perne artificially emproued: the thrife-and-thrife-
 learned sonne, of his foure & twenty times-learned father? So
 Greene would flourish. Euery man is to answere for hys owne
 defaultes: my trespasse is not my fathers, nor my fathers mine: A
 20 Gibeline may haue a Guelph to his sonne, as Barthol saith: & hath
 neuer a Saint had a Reprobate to his father? are all worthy minds,
 the issues of noble houses: or all base mindes, the ofsprings of rascall
 stockes? Were it not a felicity, to be the woort of a thousande,
 24 that being descended of meanest parentage, haue prooued, as Histories
 testify, & the world daily confirmeth? Or might not Greene, and his
 Complices, haue beene much better, then they were, or are, although
 their Parentes had beene much worfe, then they were, or are?
 28 What saith the afflicted Suppliant himselfe?

Ah woorthlesse wit, to traine me to this woe:

Ill thriue the Folly, that bewitch'd me so.

Haue we not a number of excellent industrious men and valorous
 32 knights, not greatly beholding vnto Fortune for their progeny?

*Malo pater tibi fit Therfites, who knoweth not that onely Arte of
 Heraldry?*

Quàm te Therfitæ similem producat Achilles.

The Argument of Nobility, is a gallant, and plausible argument : but what Common-place so braue, and honourable, as the Common-place of vertue? Can any thing bee obscure, where desert is famous : or any thing famous, where desert is obscure? Gramercy sweete 4
 margine, for that notable Poefy: *Meritis expendite causam*: in earnest, a singular Rule of infallible iudgemente: and I imagine, himfelfe deserueth somethinge, that specially alleadgeth Deserte. It is longe, since I declaimed vpon any Theame: but who would not 8
 pleade Vertues cause, in whatsoever subiecte? or what honest Eloquence is not furnished with Catilinarie, & Phillippiques against Vice? Not the Father, & the Sonne, but Vertue, and Vice, the efficientes of Honour, and Dishonour. He onely base, he onely 12
 simple, he onely contemptible, that hath Vice to his father, & Ignorance to his mother: the onely Parentes of rascality. And may I not truly affirme, that not only Oforius, or Patritius gallantly proue, but all wise Autors seriously approue, and euen Vertue, & Skill them- 16
 selues, with their owne foueraine mouths honorably professe? No right sonne, & heire apparant of theirs either vnnoble in himfelfe, or obscure in the world: or despised in the highest, or vnregarded of the lowest: or dishonorable in his Life, or inglorious after his Death. I 20
 speake not for any person, but for the matter: and cannot eyther condignely praise the valorous feede of the one: or sufficiently blisse the fruitfull wombe of the other. And what so vngentle in Nature, or so vnnoble in Fortune, as their Contraries: low barbarously 24
 opposed against that diuine race and heauenly generation: that cannot sturre, vnaccompanied with Enuy, and a worlde of moates? Yet neither the vnhappiest creature vtterly deuoid of all graces: (I praise somethinge in Elderton, and Greene:) nor the excellentest personage 28
 thoroughly accomplished with all perfections (ah, that Sir *Humfrey Gilbert*, and Sir *Phillip Sidney*, hadd bene as cautelous, as aduenturous:) nor they, that obiect, nor we, that answere, nor any, but a few singular men, the Miracles of the world; either for wit wondrous, 32
 or for Art exquisite, or for action admirable, or for integrity notable. I-wis, we little neede, to be charged with our fathers offences: it is inough for one, yea for the best one, to carry the burden of his owne transgressions, and errours. Errours are infinite: and follies how 36

vniverſally riſe, euen of the wiſeſt ſorte? Oh that vertues were as like the ſtarres of heauen, or the birds of the Aire, as vices are like the ſandes of the Sea, and the Beaſtes of the Earth; hce that ſeeith
 4 leaſte, ſeeith much amiſſe: the fine Diſcouerer, and curious Intelligencer, goe inuiſible, & ſtratagematically diſcry many hidden priuities of publique and priuate miſgouernment: there is an eie, that pierceth into the ſecreteſt finnes, and moſt inſcrutable thoughtes of profoundeſt
 8 Hypocriſy: in whoſe pure ſight nothing is iuſtifiable, but by pardon. Diuinity flyeth highe: and wadeth deepe: But euen in Humanity, & in the view of the world, who liueth inculpable? or who is not obnoxious to ſome criminall, or ciuill actions? or,

- 12 *Where ſhud I find, that I ſeeke, A perſon cleere as a Chriſtal? Where man God to man? where one not Diu'l to an other, Where that Zeal diuine, whoſe heauenly Sunſhin acheerith The dreryeſt drouping; and fellieſt rancour alayeth?*
- 16 *Where thoſſame mealting bowels of tender agreement, That mildly conquer moſt-rough, and hideous outrage? Where Moſes meeknes? wher Dauids ſweetnes Olimpique? Where that ſame gentle kindnes, that bounty renowned,*
- 20 *That gracious fauour, that whilom bewtiſi'd Honour: That Looue aduanced, that abandoned odious Hatred: That Sirenixed Furies: that rocks Adamantine Mollifi'd: arreared Pillars of-Glory triumphant?*

24 And ſo foorth: for the verſe is not vnknownen: & runneth in one of thoſe vnſatyricall Satyres, which M. *Spencer* long ſince embraced with an ouerlooouing Sonnet: A token of his Affection, not a Teſtimony of hys Iudgement. What ſhould I labour a needleſſe point? or what
 28 ſhould I weary you with tediousneſſe, that may much-better beſtow your vacant houres? Enough, to any is inough: to ſome, ouer-much. God knoweth, and who knoweth not, how ſenſually corrupt ſome good fellowes were, and are, that ſo ſharpely, and bitterly noted, and
 32 do note, ſo many imaginatiue corruptions in other. Would God, they had bene as quietly diſpoſed, as their parentes: or as aduiſedly ſtayed, as ſome of their frendes, that wiſhed them a milder courſe: & ſome of our pens might haue bene employed to better uſe, then this

idle businesse, or rather busy idleneffe. Whereof I desire no other fruite, but some little contentation of friendes, and some reasonable mittigation of ill-willers: vnto whose good I am diligently to addresse, & euen affectionately to dedicate any my endeouour. If in 4 some tearmes I haue vsed a little plaine dealing, albeit not without respecte, (but euery one seeith not into an others considerations: & diuers Circumstances alter the case) I craue pardon for the least ouer-sight: and will be as ready to commend any little good, euen in an 8 aduerfary: as I was vnwillinge, but enforced to touch soome palpable badd: which I would wish amended, where it may be redressed: and quite forgotten, where it ought to be buried. My meaning was not, to displeasure, or discredite any: but onely to satisfie the pleasure, 12 and mainetaine the credite of those vnto whom I owe many duties, aswell in speciall consideration as in naturall affection. Had I not bene more depely stinged in them, then in my selfe: who haue made Comedies of such Tragedies, and with pleasure giuen such 16 hoat-spurres leaue, to run themselues out of breath: what folio of folly might not for me haue passed vntouched? or who for me, might not haue flourished, or lashed in Poules Church yarde, *Cum gratia & Priuilegio?* It were good, that they, which haue 20 a dexterity in writing trimly vpon euery matter, white, or blacke: should also haue a felicity in speaking well vpon euery person, that deserueth not ill: especially such as can say something and thinke more. The terriblest tearmes may be repayed-home with 24 aduauntage: I haue knowen the raylingest Sophister in an Vniuersity, sett *non plus*: and haue seene the mad-braynest Roister-doister in a countrey, dashte out of countenance. There is Logicke inough, to aunswere Carters Logicke: and playe inough, to tame 28 Horfe-play. Wronged men are seldome tounge-tied: the patientest Creature wanteth not bloud in his hart, or incke in his penne; and although his bloud be not wild-fire, yet it is bloud; that will not be cooled with a Carde, or daunted with bugs-words: and although 32 his incke, be not pitch, or poison, yet it is incke; that will neither blushe for shame, nor waxe pale for feare; but will holde his owne, when perhaps gayer coullours shal loose their coullor; and *Aqua fortis* valiantly eate his owne harte. Good sweete Masters, quiet 36

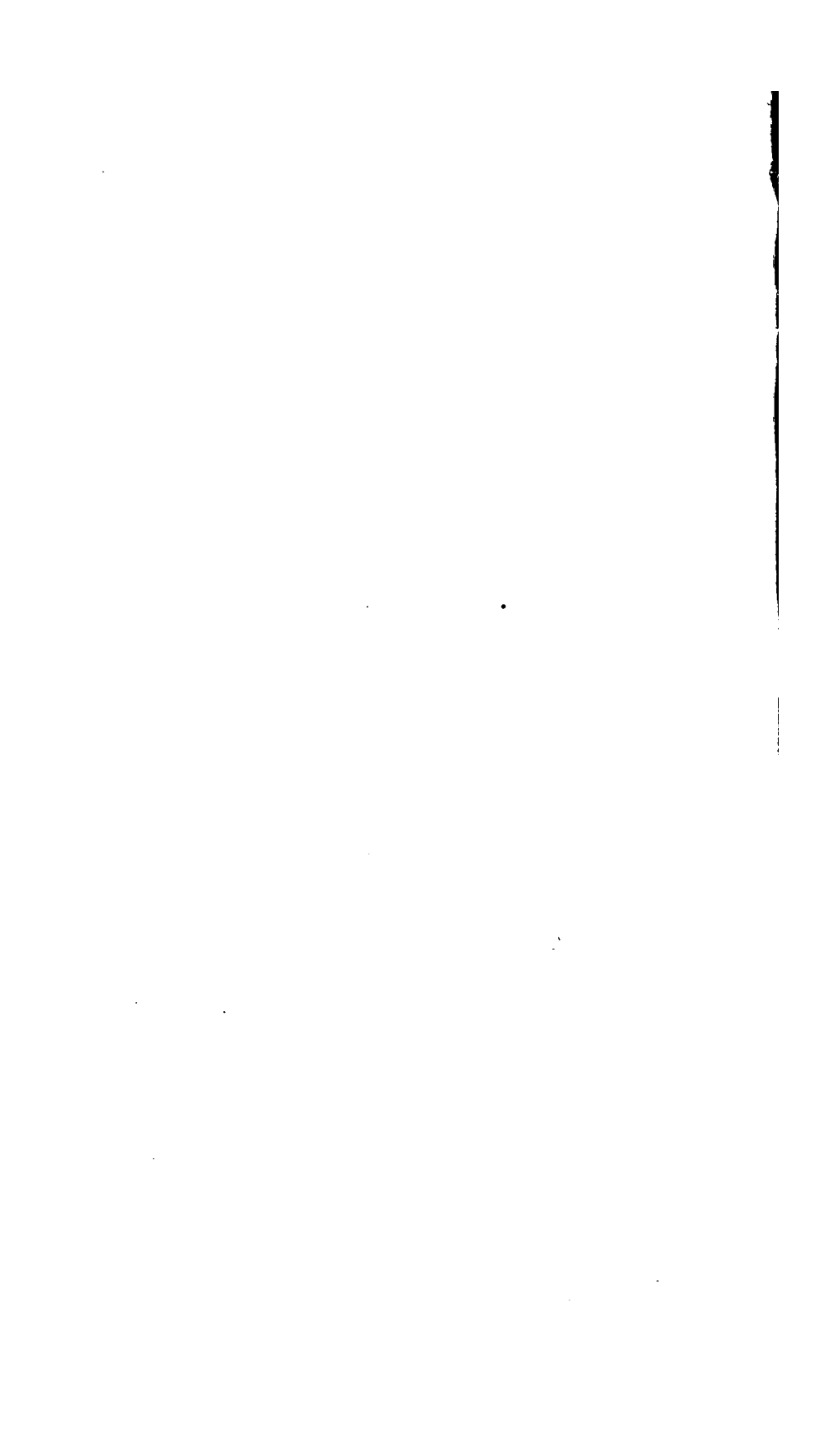
your felues : or thincke not much, to beare a little for company, that
 are so forward to load other without mercy. No man loather then
 my selfe, to contend with desperate Malecontentes : or to ouerthwart
 4 obftinate Humoriftes : or to encounter Incke-horne Aduentures : nor
 to quarrell with any forte of wrangling Companions : (koldinge is
 the language of fhrewes : and raylinge the stile of Rakehells :) or fo
 much as to call bufy heads, by their vsuall and proper names : (the
 8 things are paltry : and the very names fauour of rafcallity :) but
 there is a time, when fuch douty warriours must be appeased ; &
 fuch wife men anfwere according to their wifedome. Howbeit, in
 fauour of a priuate, and publike quietneffe, I will thanke the honeft
 12 fellowes the more, they lesse occasion they geue me, to interrupt
 better exercifes : to trouble the world with triflinge discourfes vpon
 pelting matters : to difeafe themfelues : to pleafure none, but the
 printer, & idle creatures, the onely bufy readers of fuch Nouellets.
 16 I would gladly be especially beholdinge vnto them for this courtefy :
 and dare vndertake it shall redounde more to their credite, to approue
 their defire of reconciliation, by filence : then to continue the opinion
 of their rooted despight, by fturring more coales. I hope this winde
 20 hath not shaken any fuche corne, but fellow-schollers, (as Doctor
 Caius would fay) and now forfooth fellow-writers, may bee made
 friendes, with a cup of white wine, and fome little familiar confer-
 ence, in calme and ciuill termes. I offer them my hande : and
 24 request their : which I will accept thanckfully, & kiffe louinglye :
 and euer commend the good Nature, that would, and the better
 Governemente, that coulde, master Affection with Reason, and
 fweeten gall with Humanity. For it is not my energetically perfuasion,
 28 but their owne pathetical motion, that must doe it : as the enchant-
 ing Mufe of Orpheus redeemed the ghastly ghof of his owne Euridice
 out of Hell. Such an Experimente of profounde, and diuine Arte,
 as I woulde compassionately recommend to euery amiable minde,
 32 disguised with hellifhe passion : the fouleft deformity of any fayre
 wit. Otherwise, if it stande more with their credite, to be reputed
 willfull, then wise : or if a peruerse, and froward resolution, be the
 better pollicy : they are free-men : and haue incke at will, and paper
 36 at commaundement : and a number of greedy Eares, that egerly

longe, and as it were, daunce attendaunce, to heare those dreadfull inuincible termes, steeped in *Aqua fortis*, & Gunpowder. The intoxicat sprite of the grisly Euridice (I speake to a Poet: and cannot more mildly terme that infernall Fury) may eftsoones 4 returne to her accursed lodginge, and in steede of heauenly Orpheus, embrace the hellish Oratour of the Blacke Prince: whome I will not any way make worfe, but wold wish infinitely better, then he hath made himselfe. For I thancke God, I am neither so profanely 8 vncharitable, as to send him to the Sancebell, to trusse-vp his life with a trice: nor so abiectly timorous, as for extreme fearefulness to wish, with a professed deuotion: So be it: Pray Penne, Incke, and Paper on their knees, that they may not bee troubled with him any more. Good 12 Lorde, what fantastickall panges are these? who euer endighted in such a stile, but one diuine *Aretine* in Italy, & two heauenly *Tarletons* in England: the sole platformers of odd Elocution, and onely singularities of the plaine worlde? Two of them, that so wantonly played 16 with the higheft and deepest subiectes of spirituall contemplation: Heauen, and Hell, Paradise, and Purgatory: know their locall repose: and seriously admonish the third, to be aduised, how he lauish in such dalliance. No variety, or infinity so infinite, as Inuention: which 20 hath a huge worlde, and a maine Ocean of scope, to disport, and raunge it selfe, though it arreare not vayne Hyperboles of the reuerende mysteries of God. Good sweete Oratour, be a deuine Poet indeede: and vse heauenly Eloquence indeede: and employ thy 24 golden talent with amounting vsance indeede: and with heroicall Cantoes honour right Vertue, & braue valour indeede: as noble Sir Philip Sidney, and gentle Maister Spencer haue done, with immortal Fame: and I will bestow more complements of rare amplifications 28 vpon thee, then euer any bestowed vpon them: or this Tounge euer afforded: or any Aretinish mountaine of huge exaggerations can bring-foorth: Right artificiality, (whereat I once aimed to the vttermoost power of my slender capacity,) is not mad-brained, or ridiculous, 32 or absurd, or blasphemous, or monstrous: but deepe-conceited, but pleasurable, but delicate, but exquisite, but gracious, but admirable: not according to the fantastickall mould of *Aretine*, or *Rabelays*, but according to the fine modell of *Orpheus*, *Homer*, *Pindarus*, & the ex- 36

cellentest wittes of Greece, and of the Lande, that flowed with milke,
 and hony. For what Festiuall Hymnes, so diuinely dainty, as the
 sweete Psalmes of King Dauid, royally translated by *Buchanan*? or
 4 what sage Gnomes, so profoundly pithy, as the wise Prouerbes of King
 Salomon; notably also translated: but how few *Buchanans*? Such
 liuely springes of streaming Eloquence: & such right-Olympicall
 hilles of amountinge witte: I cordially recommend to the deere
 8 Louers of the Muses: and namely to the professed Sonnes of the-
fame; *Edmond Spencer, Richard Stanihurst, Abraham France, Thomas*
Watson, Samuell Daniell, Thomas Nash, and the rest: whome I
 affectionately thancke for their studious endeouours, commendably
 12 employed in enriching, & polishing, their natiue Tongue, neuer so
 furnished, or embellished, as of-late. For I dare not name the Hon-
 orabler Sonnes, & Nobler Daughters of the sweetest, & diuineſt
 Muses, that euer sang in English or other language: for feare of
 16 suspiſion of that, which I abhorre: and their owne most delectable,
 and delicious Exercises, (the fine handy-worke of excellent Nature,
 and excellenter Arte combined) speake incomparably more, then I
 am able briefly to insinuate. Gentle mindes, and flourishing wittes,
 20 were infinitely to blame, if they should not also for curious imitation,
 propose vnto themſelues such faire Types of refined, and engraced
 Eloquence. The right Noouice of pregnante, and aspiring conceit,
 will not ouer-skippe any precious gemme of Inuention, or any beauti-
 24 full floure of Elocution, that may richly adorne, or gallantly bedecke
 the trimme garland of his budding stile. I speake generally to euery
 springing wit: but more specially to a few: and at this instante
 singularly to one: whom I salute with a hundred blessings: and
 28 entreate with as many prayers, to loue them, that loue all good wittes:
 and hate none, but the Diuell, and his incarnate Impes, notoriously
 professed. I protest, it was not thy person, that I any-way disliked:
 but thy rash, and desperate proceeding against thy well-willers:
 32 which in some had bene vnſufferable: in an youth, was more
 excusable: in a reformed youth is pardonable: and rather matter of
 concordance, then of aggrieuance. I perswade my selfe, rather to
 hope the best, then to feare the worst: & euer wish vnto other, as I
 36 would wish other, to wish vnto mee. It is my earnest desire, to

begin, and ende such friuolous altercations at once : and were it not more for other, then for my selfe, assuredly I would be the first, that should cancell this impertinent Pamflet : and throw the other two Letters, with the Sonnets annexed, into the fire. Let them haue 4 their swinge, that affect to be terribly singular : I desire not to be a blacke Swanne : or to leaue behinde me any Period in the stile of the Diuels Oratour : or any verse in the vaine of his Damnes Poet : but rather couet to be nothing in printe, then any thinge in the stampe of 8 needelesse, or fruitlesse Contention. As I am ouer-ruled at this presente, and as it standeth now : I am not to be mine owne Iudge, or Aduocate : but am contente to bee sentenced by euery courteous, or indifferente peruser, that regardeth honesty in persons, or trueth in 12 testimonies, or reason in causes. Or seeing some matters of Fame are called in question : I am not onely willing, but desirous to vnderlye the verdicts, euen of Fame her-selfe ; and to submit our whole credites, to the voice of the people, as to the voice of Equity, and the 16 Oracle of God : to whose gracious fauours he recommendeth your Courtefy, that neither flattereth the best : nor slaundereth the woorst : nor willfully wrongeth any : but professeth duety to his superiours : humanity to his equals : fauour to his inferiours : reason to all : And 20 by the same Rule, oweth you amends for the premisses : not spedily dispatched, but hastily bungled-vp as you see. London : this 8. and 9. of September.

The friend of his frendes, & foe of none. 24



151

Five Sections of
“*Palladis Tamia.*”

WITS
T R E A S V R Y

Being the Second part
of *Wits Common*
wealth.

By
Francis Meres Maister
of Artes of both Vni-
uerfities.

Vuiritur ingenio, cætera mortis erunt.

AT LONDON

Printed by P. Short, for Cuthbert Burbie, and
are to be folde at his shop at the Royall
Exchange. 1598.”

Poetrie.

[leaf 275] As in a Vine clusters of grapes are often hidde vnder the
 broade and spacious leaues : so in deepe conceited, and well couched
 4 poems, figures and fables, many things, verie profitable to be knowne,
 doe passe by a yong scholler. *Plut.*

As according to *Philoxenus*, that flesh is most sweete which is no
 flesh ; and those the delectablest fishes, which are no fishes : so that
 8 Poetrie dooth most delight which is mixt with Philosophie ; and that
 Philosophie, which is mixt with Poetrie. *Plutarchus in Commentario,*
quomodo adolescens Poetas audire debet.

As a Bee gathereth the sweetest and mildest honie from the bit-
 12 tereft flowers, & sharpest thornes : so some profite may bee extracted
 out of obscene and wanton Poems, and fables. *idem.*

Albeit many be drunke with wine, yet the Vines are not to bee
 cut downe, as *Lycurgus* did, but Welles and Fountaines are to bee
 16 digged neare vnto them : so although manie abuse poetrie, yet it is
 not to bee banished, but discretion is to bee vsed, that it may bee
 made holefome. *Idem.*

As Mandrake growing neare Vines, doth make the wine more
 20 mild : so philosophie bordering vpon poetrie dooth make the
 knowledge of it more moderate. *idem.*

As poyson mixt with meate is verie deadlie : so lasciuiousnesse
 and petulancie in poetrie mixt with profitable and pleasing matters is
 24 very pestilent. *idem.*

[leaf 276] As we are delighted in deformed creatures artificiallye
 painted : so in poetrie, which is a liuely adumbration of things, euil
 matters ingeniously contriued do delight.

28 As Phisitians vse for medicine the feete and wings of the flies
Cantharides, which flies are deadly poyson : so we may gather out of
 the same poem, that may quell the hurtfull venome of it ; for poets

do alwaies mingle somewhat in their Poems, wherby they intimate that they condemne, what they declare. *idem.*

As our breath doth make a shiller sound being sent through the narrow channell of a Trumpet, then if it be diffused abroad into the open aire : so the well knitte and succinct combination of a Poem, dooth make our meaning better knowen and discerned, then if it were deliuered at random in prose. *Seneca.*

As he that drinckes of the Well *Clitorius*, doth abhorre wine : so 8 they that haue once tasted of poetry, cannot away with the studie of philosophie ; after the same maner holdes the contrarie.

As the Anabaptists abhorre the liberall artes and humane sciences : so puritanes and precisians detest poetrie and poems. 12

As Eloquence hath found many preachers and orators worthy fauourers of her in the English toung : so her sifter poetry hath found the like welcome and entertainment giuen her by our English poets, which makes our language so gorgeous & delectable among vs. 16

As Rubarbe and Sugarcandie are pleafant & profitable : so in poetry ther is sweetnes and goodnes. *M. Iohn Haring. in his Apologie for poetry before his translated Ariosto.*

Many cockney and wanton women are often sicke, but in faith 20 they cannot tell where : so the name of poetrie is odious to some, but neither his cause, nor effects, neither the summe that contains him, nor the particularities descending from him, giue any fast handle to their carping dispraise. *Sir Philip Sidney in his Apologie 24 for poetry.*

Poets.

As some do vse an Amethift in comptations agaynst drunkennes : so certain precepts are to be vsed in hearing and reading of poets, 28 least they infect the mind. *Plut. & Plin. lib. 37. cap. 9.*

As in those places where many holfsome hearbes doe growe, there also growes many poysonfull weedes : so in Poets there are many excellent things, and many pestilent matters. *Plut.* 32

[leaf 277] As *Simonides* sayde, that the *Theffalians* were more

blockish, then that they could be deceiued of him : so the riper and
pregnanter the wit is, the sooner it is corrupted of Poets. *idem.*

As *Cato* when he was a scholler woulde not beleue his maister,
4 except hee rendered a reason of that he taught him : so wee are not
to beleue Poets in all that they write or say, except they yeelde a
reason. *Idem.*

As in the same pasture the Bee seafeth on the flower, the Goate
8 grazeth on the shrub, the swine on the root, and the Oxen, Kine &
Horses on the grasse : so in Poets one seeketh for historie, an other
for ornament of speech, another for prooffe, and an other for precepts
of good life. *idem.*

12 As they that come verie suddainlie out of a very darke place, are
greatly troubled, except by little and little they be accustomed to the
light : so in reading of Poets, the opinions of Phylosophers are to bee
sowne in the mindes of young schollers, least many diuerfities of
16 doctrines doe afterwarde distract their mindes. *idem.*

As in the portraiture of murder or incest, we praise the Art of
him that drewe it, but we detest the thing it selfe : so in lasciuious
Poets let vs imitate their elocution, but execrate their wantonnes.
20 *idem.*

Some things that are not excellent of themselves, are good for
some, because they are meet for them : so some things are com-
mended in Poets, which are fit and correspondent for the persons,
24 they speake of, although in themselves they bee filthy and not to be
spoken : As lame *Demonides* wished, that the shoes that were stolne
from him, might fit his feet that had stoln them. *idem.*

As that ship is endangered, where all leane to one side, but is in
28 safetie, one leaning one way, and another another way : so the
dissension of Poets among themselves, doth make them, that they
lesse infect their readers. And for this purpose our Satyrists, *Hall,*
the Author of Pigmaliions Image, and certaine Satyres, Rankins, and
32 such others, are very profitable.

As a Bee doth gather the iuice of honie from flowres, whereas
others are onely delighted with the colour and smell : so a Philosopher
findeth that among Poets which is profitable for good life, when as
36 others are tickled only with pleasure. *Plut.*

As wee are delighted in the picture of a Viper or a spider artificially enclosed within a precious iewell: so Poets do delight vs in y^e learned & cunning depainting of vices.

[leaf 278] As some are delighted in counterfet wines confected of 4 frutes, not that they refresh the hart, but that they make drunke: so some are delighted in Poets only for their obscenity, neuer respecting their eloquence good grace, or learning.

As Emperors, kings and princes haue in their handes authority to 8 dignifie or disgrace their nobles, attendants, subiects and vassals: so Poets haue the whole power in their handes to make men either immortally famous for their valiant exploites and vertuous exercifes, or perpetually infamous for their vicious liues. 12

As God giueth life vnto man: so a Poet giueth ornament vnto it.

As the Greeke and Latine Poets haue wonne immortall credit to their natieue speech, beeing encouraged and graced by liberall patrones 16 and bountifull Benefactors: so our famous and learned Lawreat masters of England would entitle our English to far greater admired excellency, if either the Emperor *Augustus*, or *Octauia* his sifter, or noble *Mecænas* were alieue to rewarde and countenance them; or if 20 our witty Comedians and stately Tragedians (the glorious and goodlie representers of all fine witte, glorified phraße and queint action) bee still supported and vphelde, by which meanes for lacke of Patrones (ð ingratefull and damned age) our Poets are soly or chiefly main- 24 tained, countenanced and patronized.

In the infancy of Greece, they that handled in the audience of the people, graue & necessary matters, were called wise men or eloquent men, which they ment by *Vates*: so the rest, which sang of 28 loue matters, or other lighter deuises alluring vnto pleasure and delight, were called *Poetæ* or makers.

As the holy Prophets and sanctified Apostles could neuer haue foretold nor spoken of such supernaturall matters, vnlesse they had 32 bin inspired of God: so *Cicero* in his Tusculane questions is of y^t minde, that a Poet cannot expresse verses abundantly, sufficiently, and fully, neither his eloquence can flow pleasantly, or his wordes found well and plenteously, without celestiall instinction; which 36

Poets themfelues do very often and gladly witnes of themfelues, as namely *Ouid in 6. Faſt.*

Eſt Deus in nobis agitante caleſcimus illo, &c.

- 4 And our famous Engliſh Poet *Spencer*, who in his *Sheepeheards Calender* lamenting the decay of Poetry at theſe dayes, faith moſt ſweetly to the fame.

Then make thee wings of thine aſpiring wit

- 8 *And whence thou cameſt fly backe to heauen apace, &c.*

[leaf 279] As a long gowne maketh not an Aduocate, although a gowne be a fit ornament for him : ſo riming nor verſing maketh a Poet, albeit the Senate of Poets hath choſen verſe as their fitteſt
12 rayment ; but it is y^t faining notable images of vertues, vices, or what elſe, with that delightfull teaching, which muſt bee the right deſcribing note to knowe a Poet by. *Sir Philip Sidney in his Apology for Poetry.*

- 16 A comparatiue diſcourſe of
our Engliſh Poets, with the
*Greeke, Latine, and Ita-
lian Poets.*

- 20 As Greece had three Poets of great antiquity, *Orpheus, Linus* and *Muſæus* : and *Italy*, other three auncient Poets, *Liuius Andronicus, Ennius & Plautus* : ſo hath England three auncient Poets, *Chaucer, Gower* and *Lydgate*.

- 24 As *Homer* is reputed the Prince of Greek Poets ; and *Petrarch* of Italian Poets : ſo *Chaucer* is accounted the God of Engliſh Poets.

- As *Homer* was the firſt that adorned the Greek tongue with true quantity : ſo *Piers Plowman* was the firſt that obſerued the true
28 quantitie of our verſe without the curioſitie of Rime.

- Ouid* writ a Chronicle from the beginning of the world to his own time, that is, to the raign of *Auguſtus* the Emperour : ſo hath *Harding* the Chronicler (after his maner of old harſh riming) from
32 *Adam* to his time, that is, to the raigne of King Edward the fourth.

As *Sotades Maronites* y^e Iambicke Poet gaue himfelfe wholly to write impure and lasciuious things : so *Skelton* (I know not for what great worthines, furnamed the Poet Laureat) applied his wit to scurrilities and ridiculous matters, such among the Greeks were called 4
Pantomimi, with vs Buffons.

As *Consaluo Periz* that excellent learned man, and Secretary to King *Philip* of Spayne, in translating the *Ulyffes* of *Homer* out of Greeke into Spanish, hath by good iudgement auoided the faulte of 8
Ryming, although not fully hit perfect and true versifying : so hath *Henrie Howarde* that true and noble Earle of *Surrey* in translating the fourth book of *Virgils Æneas*, whom *Michael Drayton* in his *Englands heroycall Epistles* hath eternized for an Epistle to his faire 12
Geraldine.

As these Neoterickes *Iouianus Pontanus*, *Politianus*, *Marullus Tarchaniota*, the two *Strozæ* the father and the son, *Palingenius*, [lea 280] *Mantuanus*, *Philelphus*, *Quintianus Stoa* and *Germanus Brixius* 16
haue obtained renown and good place among the auncient Latine Poets : so also these English men being Latine Poets, *Gualter Haddon*, *Nicholas Car*, *Gabriel Haruey*, *Christopher Ocland*, *Thomas Newton* with his *Leyland*, *Thomas Watfon*, *Thomas Campion*, *Brun-* 20
sward & Willey, haue attained good report and honorable aduancement in the Latin Empyre.

As the Greeke tongue is made famous and eloquent by *Homer*, *Hesiod*, *Euripedes*, *Aeschilus*, *Sophocles*, *Pindarus*, *Phocylides*, and 24
Aristophanes ; and the Latine tongue by *Virgill*, *Ouid*, *Horace*, *Silius Italicus*, *Lucanus*, *Lucretius*, *Anfonius* and *Claudianus* : so the English tongue is mightily enriched, and gorgeously inuested in rare ornaments and resplendent abiliments by Sir *Philip Sidney*, *Spencer*, 28
Daniel, *Drayton*, *Warner*, *Shakespeare*, *Marlow* and *Chapman*.

As *Xenophon*, who did imitate so excellently, as to giue vs *effigiem iusti imperij*, the portraiture of a iust Empyre vnder y^e name of *Cyrus* (as *Cicero* saith of him) made therein an absolute heroicall 32
Poem ; and as *Heliodorus* writ in prose his sugred inuention of that picture of Loue in *Theagines* and *Cariclea*, and yet both excellent admired Poets : so Sir *Philip Sidney* writ his immortal Poem, *The Countesse of Pembrookes Arcadia*, in Prose, and yet our rarest Poet. 36

As *Sextus Propertius* saide; *Nescio quid magis nascitur Iliade*: so I say of *Spencers Fairy Queene*, I knowe not what more excellent or exquisite Poem may be written.

4 As *Achilles* had the aduantage of *Hector*, because it was his fortune to bee extolled and renowned by the heauenly verse of *Homer*: so *Spensers Elifa the Fairy Queen* hath the aduantage of all the *Queenes* in the worlde, to bee eternized by so diuine a Poet.

8 As *Theocritus* is famoused for his *Idyllia* in Greeke, and *Virgill* for his *Eclogs* in Latine: so *Spencer* their imitatur in his *Shepherdes Calender*, is renowned for the like argument, and honoured for fine Poeticall inuention, and most exquisite wit.

12 As *Parthenius Nicæus* excellently sung the praises of his *Arete*: so *Daniel* hath diuinely sonetted the matchlesse beauty of his *Delia*.

As euery one mourneth, when hee heareth of the lamentable plangors of *Thracian Orpheus* for his dearest *Euridice*: so euery one
16 passionateth, when he readeth the afflicted death of *Daniels* distressed *Rosamond*.

[leaf 28r] As *Lucan* hath mournefully depainted the ciuill wars of *Pompey & Cæsar*: so hath *Daniel* the ciuill wars of *Yorke* and
20 *Lancafter*; and *Drayton* the ciuill wars of *Edward* the second, and the *Barons*.

As *Virgil* doth imitate *Catullus* in y^e like matter of *Ariadne* for his story of *Queene Dido*: so *Michael Drayton* doth imitate *Ouid* in
24 his *Englands Heroical Epistles*.

As *Sophocles* was called a Bee for the sweetnes of his tongue: so in *Charles Fitz-Iefferies Drake*, *Drayton* is termed *Golden-mouth'd*, for the purity and pretiounesse of his stile and phrase.

28 As *Accius*, *M. Attilius* and *Milithus* were called *Tragœdiographi*, because they writ Tragedies: so may wee truly terme *Michael Drayton* *Tragœdiographus*, for his passionate penning the downfals of valiant *Robert of Normandy*, chaff *Matilda*, and great *Gaueston*.

32 As *Ioan. Honterus* in Latine verse writ 3 Bookes of cosmography w^t Geographical tables: so *Michael Drayton* is now in penning in English verse a Poem called *Polu-olbion* Geographical and Hydrographical of all the forests, woods, mountaines, fountaines, riuers,
36 lakes, fouds, bathes and springs that be in England.

As *Aulus Perſus Flaccus* is reported among al writers to be of an honeſt life and vpright conuerſation : ſo *Michael Drayton* (*quem toties honoris & amoris cauſa nomino*) among ſchollers, ſouldiours, Poets, and all ſorts of people, is helde for a man of vertuous diſpoſition, 4 honeſt conuerſation, and wel gouerned cariage, which is almoſt miraculous among good wits in theſe declining and corrupt times, when there is nothing but rogerie in villanous man,¹ & when cheating and craftines is counted the cleaneſt wit, and foundeſt wiſedome. 8

As *Decius Aufonius Gallus in libris Faſtorum*, penned the occurrences of y^e world from the firſt creation of it to his time, that is, to the raigne of the Emperor *Gratian* : ſo *Warner* in his abſolute *Albions Englande* hath moſt admirably penned the hitorie of his own country 12 from *Noah* to his time, that is, to the raigne of Queene *Elizabeth* ; I haue heard him termd of the beſt wits of both our Vniuerſities, our Engliſh *Homer*.

As *Euripedes* is the moſt ſententious among the Greek Poets : ſo 16 is *Warner* among our Engliſh Poets.

As the ſoule of *Euphorbus* was thought to liue in *Pythagoras* : ſo the ſweete wittie ſoule of *Ouid* liues in mellifluous & hony-tongued *Shakeſpeare*, witnes his *Venus* and *Adonis*, his *Lucrece*, his ſugred 20 [leaf 282] Sonnets among his priuate friends, &c.

As *Plautus* and *Seneca* are accounted the beſt for Comedy and Tragedy among the Latines : ſo *Shakeſpeare* among y^e Engliſh is the moſt excellent in both kinds for the ſtage ; for Comedy, witnes his 24 *Gentlemen of Verona*, his *Errors*, his *Loue labors loſt*, his *Loue labours wonne*, his *Midſummers night dreame*, & his *Merchant of Venice* : for Tragedy his *Richard the 2.* *Richard the 3.* *Henry the 4.* *King John*, *Titus Andronicus* and his *Romeo and Iuliet*. 28

As *Epilus Stolo* ſaid, that the Muſes would ſpeake with *Plautus* tongue, if they would ſpeak Latin : ſo I ſay that the Muſes would ſpeak with *Shakeſpeares* fine filed phraſe, if they would ſpeake Engliſh. 32

As *Muſæus*, who wrote the loue of *Hero* and *Leander*, had two excellent ſchollers, *Thamarus* & *Hercules* : ſo hath he in England two

¹ An expreſſion quoted from the Firſt Part of "Henry the 4," which is named in the correſponding line of the next page.

excellent Poets, imitators of him in the same argument and subiect, *Christopher Marlowe*, and *George Chapman*.

As *Ouid* saith of his worke ;

- 4 *Iamque opus exegi, quod nec Iouis ira, nec ignis,
Nec poterit ferrum, nec edax abolere vetustas.*

And as *Horace* saith of his ; *Exegi monumentum ære perennius ; Regalique situ pyramidum altius ; Quod non imber edax ; Non Aquilo*
8 *impotens possit diruere ; aut innumerabilis annorum series & fuga temporum :* so say I feuerally of fir *Philip Sidneyes, Spencers, Daniels, Draytons, Shakespeares, and Warners workes ;*

- Non Iouis ira : imbres : Mars : ferrum : flamma, senectus,*
12 *Hoc opus vnda : lues : turbo : venena ruent.*
Et quanquam ad plucherrimum hoc opus euertendum tres illi Dij conspirabunt, Cronus, Vulcanus, & pater ipse gentis ;
Non tamen annorum series, non flamma, nec enfis,
16 *Æternum potuit hoc abolere Decus.*

As Italy had *Dante, Boccace, Petrarch, Tassò, Celiano* and *Ariosto :* so England had *Mathew Roydon, Thomas Atchelow, Thomas Watfon, Thomas Kid, Robert Greene & George Peele.*

- 20 As there are eight famous and chiefe languages, *Hebrew, Greek, Latine, Syriack, Arabicke, Italian, Spanish* and *French :* so there are eight notable feuerall kindes of Poets, *Heroick, Lyricke, Tragicke, Comicke, Satiricke, Iambicke, Elegiacke & Pastoral.*
24 As *Homer* and *Virgil* among the Greeks and Latines are the chiefe Heroick Poets : so *Spencer* and *Warner* be our chiefe heroicall Makers.

- As *Pindarus, Anacreon* and *Callimachus* among the Greekes ;
28 [leaf 283] and *Horace* and *Catullus* among the Latines are the best Lyrick Poets : so in this faculty the best among our Poets are *Spencer* who excelleth in all kinds) *Daniel, Drayton, Shakespeare, Bretton.*

- As these Tragicke Poets flourished in Greece, *Aeschylus, Euripedes,*
32 *Sophocles, Alexander Aetolus, Achæus Erithriæus, Aftydamas Athenensis, Apollodorus Tarsensis, Nicomachus Phrygius, Thepsis Atticus,* and *Timon Apolloniates ;* and these among the Latines, *Accius, M. Attilius, Pomponius Secundus* and *Seneca :* so these are our best for

Tragedie, the Lord *Buckhurst*, Doctor *Leg* of Cambridge, Doctor *Edes* of Oxforde, maister *Edward Ferris*,¹ the Authour of the *Mirroure for Magistrates*, *Marlow*, *Peele*, *Watson*, *Kid*, *Shakespeare*, *Drayton*, *Chapman*, *Decker*, and *Beniamin Iohnson*. 4

As *M. Anneus Lucanus* writ two excellent Tragedies, one called *Medea*, the other *de Incendio Troiæ cum Priami calamitate*: so Doctor *Leg* hath penned two famous tragedies, y^e one of *Richard the 3.* the other of the destruction of *Ierusalem*. 8

The best Poets for Comedy among the Greeks are these, *Menander*, *Aristophanes*, *Eupolis Atheniensis*, *Alexis Terius*, *Nicostratus*, *Amipffias Atheniensis*, *Anaxandrides Rhodius*, *Aristonymus*, *Archippus Atheniensis* and *Callias Atheniensis*; and among the Latines, *Plautus*, *Terence*,¹² *Næuius*, *Sext. Turpilius*, *Licinius Imbrex*, and *Virgilius Romanus*: so the best for Comedy amongst vs bee, *Edward Earle* of Oxforde, Doctor *Gager* of Oxforde, Maister *Rowley* once a rare Scholler of learned *Pembroke Hall* in Cambridge, Maister *Edwardes* one of her 16 Maiesties Chappell, eloquent and wittie *John Lilly*, *Lodge*, *Gascoyne*, *Greene*, *Shakespeare*, *Thomas Nash*, *Thomas Heywood*, *Anthony Mundy* our best plotter, *Chapman*, *Porter*, *Wilson*, *Hathway*, and *Henry Chettle*. 20

As *Horace*, *Lucilius*, *Inuenall*, *Perffius* & *Lucullus* are the best for Satyre among the Latines: so with vs in the same faculty these are chiefe, *Piers Plowman*, *Lodge*, *Hall* of Imanuel Colledge in Cambridge; the Authour of *Pigmaliions Image*, and certaine Satyrs; 24 the Author of *Skialetheia*.

Among the Greekes I wil name but two for Iambicks, *Archilochus Parius*, and *Hipponax Ephefus*: so amongst vs I name but two Iambical Poets, *Gabriel Haruey*, and *Richard Stanyhurst*, bicause 28 I haue seene no mo in this kind.

As these are famous among the Greeks for Elegie, *Melanthus*, *Mymnerus Colophonius*, *Olympius Myffius*, *Parthenius Nicæus*; [leaf 284] *Philetas Cous*, *Theogenes Megarensis* and *Pigres Halicarnaf*- 32

¹ It is usually believed that this is an error for George Ferrers. But Meres, here as elsewhere, follows Puttenham, who writes:

"That for Tragedie, the Lord of Buckhurst, and Maister *Edward Ferris* for such doings as I haue sene of theirs do deserue the hiest price:" [praise]. *The Arte of English Poesie*, 1589. (Arber's Reprint, p. 77.)

ſæus; and theſe among the Latines, *Mecænas*, *Ouid*, *Tibullus*, *Propertius*, *T. Valgius*, *Caffius Seuerus* & *Clodius Sabinus*: ſo theſe are the moſt paſſionate among vs to bewaile and bemoane the perplexities
 4 of Loue, *Henrie Howard* Earle of Surrey, fir *Thomas Wyat* the elder, fir *Francis Brian*, fir *Philip Sidney*, fir *Walter Rawley*, fir *Edward Dyer*, *Spencer*, *Daniel*, *Drayton*, *Shakeſpeare*, *Whetſtone*, *Gafcoyne*, *Samuell Page* ſometimes fellowe of *Corpus Chriſti* Colledge in Oxford,
 8 *Churchyard*, *Bretton*.

As *Theocritus* in Greeke, *Virgil* and *Mantuan* in Latine, *Sanazar* in Italian, and the Authour of *Amyntæ Gaudia* and *Walſinghams Melibæus* are the beſt for paſtorall: ſo among vs the beſt in this kind
 12 are fir *Philip Sidney*, maſter *Challener*, *Spencer*, *Stephen Goffon*, *Abraham Fraunce* and *Barnefield*.

Theſe and many other *Epigrammatifts* y^e Latin tongue hath, *Q. Catulus*, *Porcius Licinius*, *Quintus Cornificius*, *Martial*, *Cn. Getulicus*,
 16 and wittie fir *Thomas Moore*: ſo in Engliſh we haue theſe, *Heywood*, *Drante*, *Kendal*, *Baſtard*, *Dauies*.

As noble *Mecænas* that ſprung from the *Hetrufcan* Kinges not onely graced Poets by his bounty, but alſo by beeing a Poet himſelfe;
 20 and as *James the 6.* nowe king of Scotland is not only a fauorer of Poets, but a Poet, as my friend maſter *Richard Barnefelde* hath in this Diſticke paſſing well recorded:

The King of Scots now liuing is a Poet,
 24 *As his Lepanto, and his furies ſhow it:*

ſo *Elizabeth* our dread ſoueraign and gracious Queene is not only a liberal patrone vnto Poets, but an excellent Poet herſelfe, whoſe learned, delicate and noble Muſe ſurmoundeth, be it in *Ode*, *Elegy*,
 28 *Epigram*, or in any other kind of Poem *Heroicke*, or *Lyricke*.¹

Octauius ſiſter vnto *Auguſtus* the Emperour was exceeding bountifull vnto *Virgil*, who gaue him for making 26. verſes, 1137 pounds, to wit, tenne *Seſtertiales* for euerie verſe, which amount to aboute 43

¹ So Puttenham, at the laſt reference:

"But laſt in recital and firſt in degree is the Queene our ſoueraigne Lady, whoſe learned, delicate, noble Muſe, eaſily ſurmoundeth all the reſt that haue written before her time or ſince, for ſence, ſweetneſſe and ſubtiltie, be it *Ode*, *Elegie*, *Epigram*, or any other kinde of poeme *Heroick* or *Lyricke*," &c.

Pounds for euery verse : so learned *Mary*, the honorable Countesse of *Pembrook*, the noble sister of immortall sir *Philip Sidney*, is very **L**iberall vnto Poets; besides shee is a most delicate Poet, of whome I **M**ay say, as *Antipater Sidonius* writeth of *Sappho* :

*Dulcia Mnemosyne demirans carmina Sapphus,
Quoëfuit decima Pieris vnde foret.*

[leaf 285] Among others in times past, Poets had these fauourers, *Augustus*, *Mecænas*, *Sophocles*, *Germanicus*, an Emperour, a noble **M**an, a Senatour, and a Captaine : so of later times Poets haue these **P**atrones, *Robert* king of Sicil, the great king *Frances* of France, king *James* of Scotland, & *Queene Elizabeth* of England.

As in former times two great Cardinals, *Bembus* & *Biena*, did **C**ountenance Poets : so of late yeares two great preachers haue giuen them their right hands in felowship, *Beza* and *Melancthon*.

As the learned philosphers *Fracastorius* and *Scaliger* haue highly prized them : so haue the eloquent Orators *Pontanus* and *Muretus* very **G**loriously estimated them.

As *Georgius Buckananus Iepthe*, amongst all moderne Tragedies is able to abide the touch of *Aristotles* precepts, and *Euripedes* examples : so is *Bishop Watsons Atsalon*.

As *Terence* for his translations out of *Apollodorus* & *Menander*, and *Aquilius* for his translation out of *Menander*, and *C. Germanicus Augustus* for his out of *Aratus*, and *Ansonius* for his translated *Epigrams* out of Greeke, and Doctour *Johnson* for his *Frogge-sight* out of *Homer*, and *Watson* for his *Antigone* out of *Sophocles*, haue got good commendations : so these versifiers for their learned translations are of good note among vs, *Phaer* for *Virgils Aeneads*, *Golding* for *Ouids Metamorphosis*, *Harington* for his *Orlando Furioso*, the translators of *Senecaes Tragedies*, *Barnabe Googe* for *Palingenius*, *Turberuile* for *Ouids Epistles* and *Mantuan*, and *Chapman* for his inchoate *Homer*.

As the Latines haue these *Emblematists*, *Andreas Alciatus*, *Reufnerus*, and *Sambucus* : so we haue these, *Geffrey Whitney*, *Andrew Willet*, and *Thomas Combe*.

As *Nonnus Panapolyta* writ the Gospell of saint *John* in Greeke **H**exameters : so *Ieruis Markham* hath written *Salomons Canticles* in English verse.

As *C. Plinius* writ the life of *Pomponius Secundus*: so yong *Charles Fitz-Ieffrey*, that high touring Falcon, hath most gloriously penned the honourable life and death of worthy sir *Francis Drake*.

- 4 As *Hesiod* writ learnedly of husbandry in Greeke: so hath *Tusser* very wittily and experimentally written of it in English.

As *Antipater Sidonius* was famous for extemporall verse in Greeke, and *Ouid* for his *Quicquid conabar dicere versus erat*: so was our
8 *Tarleton*, of whome Doctour *Cafe* that learned physitian thus speaketh [leaf 286] in the seuenth Booke, & seenteenth chapter of his *Politikes*; *Aristoteles suum Theodoretum laudauit quendam peritum Tragœdiarum actorem*; *Cicero suum Roscium: nos Angli Tarletonum, in cuius voce*
12 *Œ vultu omnes iocosi affectus, in cuius cerebroso capite lepidæ facitiæ habitant*. And so is now our wittie *Wilson*, who, for learning and extemporall witte in this facultie, is without compare or compeere, as to his great and eternall commendations he manifested in his
16 chalenge at the Swanne on the Banke side.

As *Achilles* tortured the deade bodie of *Hector*, and as *Antonius* and his wife *Fuluia* tormented the liuelesse corps of *Cicero*: so
Gabriell Haruey hath shewed the same inhumanitie to *Greene* that
20 lies full low in his graue.

As *Eupolis* of Athens vsed great libertie in taxing the vices of men: so dooth *Thomas Nash*, witnesse the broode of the *Harueys*.

As *Aclæon* was wooried of his owne hounds: so is *Tom Nash* of
24 his *Ile of Dogs*. Dogges were the death of *Euripedes*, but bee not disconsolate gallant young *Iuuenall*, *Linus*, the sonne of *Apollo* died the same death. Yet God forbid that so braue a witte should so basely perish, thine are but paper dogges, neither is thy banishment
28 like *Ouids*, eternally to conuerse with the barbarous *Getes*. Therefore comfort thy selfe sweete *Tom*. with *Ciceros* glorious return to Rome, & with the counsel *Aeneas* giues to his seabeaten soldiors, lib. 1 *Aeneid*.

- 32 *Pluck vp thine heart, & driue from thence both feare and care away: To thinke on this may pleasure be perhaps another day.*

Durato, & temet rebus seruato secundis.

As *Anacreon* died by the pot: so *George Peele* by the pox.

- 36 As *Archefilaus Prytanæus* perished by wine at a drunken feast,²⁵

Hermippus testifieth in *Diogenes*: so *Robert Greene* died of a surfet taken at Pickeld Herrings, & Rhenish wine, as witnesseth *Thomas Nash*, who was at the fatall banquet.

As *Iodelle*, a French Tragical poet beeing an Epicure, and an Atheist, made a pitifull end: so our tragicall poet *Marlow* for his Epicurisme and Atheisme had a tragicall death; you may read of this *Marlow* more at large in the *Theatre of Gods iudgments*, in the 25. chapter entreating of Epicures and Atheists. 8

As the poet *Lycophron* was shot to death by a certain riuall of [leaf 287] his: so *Christopher Marlow* was stabd to death by a bawdy Seruingman, a riuall of his in his lewde loue.

Painters.

12

Apelles painted a Mare and a Dogge so liuelie, that Horses and Dogges passing by woulde neigh, and barke at them; hee grewe so famous for his excellent Art, that great *Alexander* came often to his shoppe to visite him, and commaunded that none other should paint 16 him; at his death hee left *Venus* vnfinished, neither was anie euer founde, that durst perfect, what hee had begunne. *Zeuxis* was so excellent in painting, that it was easier for anie man to view his pictures, then to imitate them, who to make an excellent Table, had 20 fise Agrigentine Virgins naked by him; hee painted Grapes so liuelie, that Birdes did flie to eate them. *Parrhasius* painted a Sheete so artificiallie, that *Zeuxis* tooke it for a Sheete in deede, and commaunded it to bee taken away to see the picture, that hee thought it 24 had vayed; as learned and skilfull Greece had these excellently renowned for their limning: so Englande hath these; *Hiliard*, *Isaac Oliuer*, and *Iohn de Creetes*, very famous for their painting.

As Greece moreouer had these Painters; *Timantes*, *Phidias*, 28 *Polignotus*, *Paneus*, *Bularchus*, *Eumarus* *Cimon* *Cleonæus*, *Pythis*, *Apollodorus Atheniensis*, *Aristides Thebanus* *Nicophanes*, *Perseus*, *Antiphilus*, and *Nicearchus*: so in Englande wee haue also these; *William* and *Francis Segar* brethren, *Thomas* and *Iohn Bettes*, *Lockey*, 32 *Lyne*, *Peake*, *Peter Cole*, *Arnolde*, *Marcus*, *Iaques de Bray*, *Cornelius*, *Peter Golchis*, *Hieronimo* and *Peter Vande Velde*.

As *Lyfippus*, *Praziteles*, and *Pyrgoteles*, were excellent engrauers : fo wee haue thefe engrauers, *Rogers*, *Christopher Switfer*, and *Cure*.

Muficke

- 4 The Loadstone draweth iron vnto it, but the ftone of Aethiopia called *Theamedes* driueth it away : fo there is a kinde of Muficke that dooth affwage and appeafe the affections, and a kinde that doth kinde and prouoke the paffions.
- 8 As there is no law that hath foueraintie ouer loue : fo there is no heart that hath rule ouer Muficke, but Muficke fubdues it.
As one day takes from vs the credite of another : fo one ftain of [leaf 288] Muficke extingts the pleafure of another.
- 12 As the heatt ruleth ouer all the members : fo Muficke ouercommeth the heart.
As beautie is no beautie without vertue : fo Muficke is no Muficke without Art.
- 16 As all thinges loue their likes : fo the moft curious eare the delicateft Muficke.
As too much fpeaking hurts ; too much galling finarts : fo too much Mufick gluts and diftempereth.
- 20 As *Plato* and *Aristotle* are counted princes in philofophie and Logicke ; *Hippocrates* and *Galen* in phifick ; *Ptolomie* in Aftrologie, *Euclide* in Geometrie, and *Cicero* in eloquence : fo *Boëtius* is eftemed a Prince and captaine in Muficke.
- 24 As *Priefts* were famous among the Egyptians ; *Magi* among the Caldeans ; and *Gymnofophiftes* among the Indians : fo Muficians flourifhed among the Grecians, and therefore *Epaminondas* was accounted more vnlearned then *Themiftocles*, becaufe he had no skill in
- 28 Muficke.
As *Mercurie* by his eloquence reclaymed men from their barbaroufneffe and crueltie : fo *Orpheus* by his Mufick fubdued fierce beafts, and wild birds.
- 32 As *Demofthenes*, *Ifocrates*, and *Cicero* excelled in Oratorie : fo *Orpheus*, *Amphion*, and *Linus*, furpaffed in Muficke.

As Greece had these excellent Musitions; *Arion, Dorceus, Timotheus, Milefius, Chryfogonus, Terpander, Leslius, Simon Magnefius, Philamon, Linus, Stratonicus, Ariflonus, Chiron, Achilles, Clinias, Eumonius, Demodochus, and Ruffinus*: so Englande hath these; 4 *Maifler Cooper, Maifler Fairfax, Maifler Tallis, Maifler Tauerner, Maifler Blithman, Maifler Bird, Doctör Tie, Doctör Dallis, Doctör Bull, M. Thomas Mud, sometimes fellow of Pembroke hal in Cambridge, M. Edward Iohnfon, Maifler Blankes, Maifler Randall, 8 Maifler Philips, Maifler Dowland, and M. Morley.*

From "Colin Clouts come home againe.

By Edm. Spencer.

At London Printed by H. L. for Mathew Lownes.
1595. [4to, pp. 80]

Printed by T. Creed for Wm. Ponsonbie."

And there, though laft not leaf is AETION,
A gentler ſhepherd may no where be found:
Whoſe Muſe, full of high thoughts inuention
Doth like himſelfe Heroically found.¹

¹ The dedication of this poem to Sir Walter Raleigh is dated "the 27 of December, 1591." But portions of the poem were ſubſequentlly added, three verſes being certainly written after April 16, 1594.

WILLOBIE

HIS

A V I S A .

OR

The true Picture of a modest Maid, and of a chast and constant wife.

In Hexamiter verse. The like argument wherof, was neuer heretofore published.

Read the preface to the Reader before
you enter further

A vertuous woman is the crowne of her husband, but she that maketh him ashamed, is as corruption in his bones. Prouerb. 12. 4.

Imprinted at London by
John Windet.

1594.

¹ *In praise of WILLOBIE his AVISA, HEX-
AMETON TO THE AUTHOR.*

- I**N Lauine Lande though Liuie bost, [1 sign. A 4]
There hath beene seene a Constant dame :
Though Rome lament that she haue lost
The Gareland of her rarest fame,
Yet now we see, that here is found,
As great a Faith in English ground [6]
- Though Collatine haue deerely bought ;*
To high renoune, a lasting life,
And found, that most in vaine haue sought,
To haue a Faire, and Constant wife,
Yet Tarquyne pluckt his glistening grape,
And Shake-speare, paints poore Lucrece rape. [12]
- Though Susan shine in faithfull praise,*
As twinckling Starres in Christall skie,
Penelop's fame though Greekes do raise,
Of faithfull wiues to make vp three,
To thinke the Truth, and say no lesse,
Our Auisa shall make a messe. [18]
- This number knits so sure a knot,*
Time doubtles, that she shall adde no more,
Vnconstant Nature, hath begot,
Of Fleting Feemes, such fickle store,
Two thousand yeares, haue scarcely seene,
Such as the worst of these haue beene. [24]
- Then Aui-Susan ioyne in one,*
Let Lucrece-Auis be thy name,
This English Eagle sores alone,
And farre surmounts all others fame,
Where high or low, where great or small,
This Brytan Bird out-flies them all. [30]

*Were these three happie, that haue found
 Braue Poets to depaint their praise?
 Of Rurall Pipe, with sweetest sound,
 That haue beene heard these many daies,
 Sweete wylloby his AVIS blest
 That makes her mount aboue the rest.*

[36]

*Contraria Contrarijs :
 Vigilantius · Dormitanus.*

Cant. XLVIII.

Henrico Willobego. Italo-Hispalensis.

H. W. being sodenly infected with the contagion of a fantastick fit, at the first sight of A, pyneth a while in secret grieffe, at length not able any longer to indure the burning heate of so feruent a humour, bewrayeth the secreasy of his disease vnto his familiar friend W. S. who not long before had tryed the curtesy of the like passion, and was now newly recouered of the like infection; yet finding his frend let bloud in the same vaine, he took pleasure for a tyme to see him bleed, & in steed of stopping the issue, he enlargeth the wound, with the sharpe rasor of a willing conceit, perswading him that he thought it a matter very easy to be compassed, & no doubt with payne, diligence & some cost in time to be obtayned. Thus this miserable comforter comforting his frend with an impossibilitie, eyther for that he now would secretly laugh at his frends folly, that had giuen occasion not long before vnto others to laugh at his owne, or because he would see whether an other could play his part better then himselfe, & in vewing a far off the course of this louing Comedy he determined to see whether it would sort to a happier end for this new actor, then it did for the old player. But at length this Comedy was like to haue growen to a Tragedy, by the weake & feeble estate that .H. W. was brought vnto, by a desperate vewe of an impossibility of obtaining his purpose, til Time & Necessity, being his best Phisitions brought him a plaster, if not to heale, yet in part to ease his maladye. In all which discourse is liuely represented the vnrewly

rage of vnbrudeled fancy, hauing the raines to roue at liberty, with the dyuers & sundry changes of affections & temptations, which Will, set loose from Reason, can deuise. &c.

H W

WHat sodaine chance or change is this,
 That doth bereaue my quyet rest?
 What surly cloud eclipst my blisse,
 What sprite doth rage within my brest?
 Such fainty qualmes I neuer found,
 Till first I saw this westerne ground.

[6]

Can change of ayre complexions change,
 And strike the sences out of frame?
 Though this be true, yet this is strange,
 Sith I so lately hither came:
 And yet in body cannot find
 So great a change as in my mynd.

[12]

My lustlesse limmes do pyne away,
 Because my hart is dead within
 All liuely heat I feele decay,
 And deadly cold his roome doth win,
 My humors all are out of frame,
 I frize amid'st the burning flame.

[18]

I haue the feauer Ethicke right,
 I burne within, consume without,
 And hauing melted all my might
 Then followes death, without all doubt;
 O fearefull foole, that know my greefe,
 Yet sew and seeke for no releefe.

[24]

I know the tyme, I know the place,
 Both when and where my eye did vew
 That nouell shape, that frendly face,
 That so doth make my hart to rew,
 O happy tyme if she inclyne,
 If not, O wourth these lucklesse eyne. [30]

I loue the seat where she did sit,
 I kisse the grasse, where she did tread,
 Me-thinkes I see that face as yet,
 And eye, that all these turmoyles breed,
 I enuie that this seat, this ground,
 Such frendly grace and fauour found. [36]

I dream't of late, God grant that dreame
 Protend my good, that she did meete
 Me in this greene by yonder streame,
 And smyling did me frendly greete :
 Where wandring dreames be iust or wrong,
 I mind to try ere it be long. [42]

But yonder comes my faythfull frend,
 That like assaultes hath often tryde,
 On his aduise I will depend,
 Where I shall winne, or be denyde,
 And looke what counsell he shall giue,
 That will I do, where dye or liue. [48]

Cant. XLV.

W. S.

WELL met, frend Harry, what's the cause
 You looke so pale with Lented cheeks?
 Your wanny face & sharpened nose
 Shew plaine, your mind some thing mislikes,

If you will tell me what it is,
 Ilc helpe to mend what is amisse. [6]

What is she, man, that workes thy woe,
 And thus thy tickling fancy moue?
 Thy drousie eyes, & sighes do shoe,
 This new disease procedes of loue,
 Tell what she is that witch't thee so,
 I sweare it shall no farder go. [12]

A heauy burden wearieth one,
 Which being parted then in twaine,
 Seemes very light, or rather none,
 And boren well with little paine:
 The smothered flame, too closely pent,
 Burnes more extrceme for want of vent. [18]

So sorrowes shrynde in secret brest,
 Attainte the hart with hotter rage,
 Then griefes that are to frendes exprest,
 Whose comfort may some part asswage:
 If I a frend, whose faith is tryde,
 Let this request not be denyde. [24]

Excessiue griefes good counsellis want,
 And cloud the sence from sharpe conceits,
 No reason rules, where sorrowes plant,
 And folly feedes, where fury fretes,
 Tell what she is, and you shall see,
 What hope and help shall come from mee. [30]

Cant. XLVI.

H. W.

Secft yonder howfe, where hanges the badge
 Of Englands Saint, when captaines cry

Victorious land, to conquering rage,
 Loe, there my hopelesse helpe doth ly:
 And there that frendly foe doth dwell,
 That makes my hart thus rage and swell. [6]

Cant. XLVII.

W. S.

Well, say no more: I know thy grieffe,
 And face from whence these flames arise,
 It is not hard to fynd relieffe,
 If thou wilt follow good aduise:
 She is no Saynt, She is no Nonne,
 I thinke in tyme she may be wonne. [6]

*Ars veterato-
ria.*

At first repulfe you must not faint,
 Nor flye the field though she deny
 You twise or thrise, yet manly bent,
 Againe you must, and still reply:
 When tyme permits you not to talke,
 Then let your pen and fingers walke. [12]

*Munera (cre-
de mihi) pla-
cant homi-
nesque Deos-
que.*

Apply her still with dyuers thinges,
 (For giftes the wyfest will deceaue)
 Sometymes with gold, sometymes with ringes,
 No tyme nor fit occasion leaue,
 Though coy at first she seeme and wielde,
 These toyes in tyme will make her yielde. [18]

Looke what she likes; that you must loue,
 And what she hates, you must detest,
 Where good or bad, you must approue,
 The wordes and workes that please her best:
 If she be godly, you must sweare,
 That to offend you stand in feare. [24]

Wicked wiles
to deceaue
witles wo-
men.

You must commend her louing face,
For women ioy in beauties praife,
You must admire her sober grace,
Her wisdom and her vertuous wayes,
Say, 'twas her wit & modest shoe,
That made you like and loue her fo.

[30]

You must be secret, constant, free,
Your silent sighes and trickling teares,
Let her in secret often see,
Then wring her hand, as one that feares
To speake, then wish she were your wife,
And last desire her saue your life.

[36]

When she doth laugh, you must be glad,
And watch occasions, tyme and place,
When she doth frowne, you must be sad,
Let sighes & sobbes request her grace :
Swear that your loue is truly ment,
So she in tyme must needs relent.

[42]

EPICEDIUM.

A funerall Song, upon the vertuous life and godly death of the right worshipfull the Lady Helen Branch.

Virtus sola manet, cætera cunctu ruunt.

London, printed by Thomas Creede, 1594.

(From Sir Egerton Brydges' *Restituta* (1815), vol. iii. pp. 297—299. "The '*Epicidium*' . . . is signed W. HAR. which may possibly be an adumbration for Sir William Harbert, a poet of fair repute." *ib.* p. 298.)

(First verse.)

You that to shew your wits, haue taken toyle
 In regist'ring the deeds of noble men ;
 And sought for matter in a forraine soyle,
 As worthie subjects of your silver pen,
 Whom you have rais'd from darke oblivion's den. [5]
 You that have writ of chaste Lucretia,¹
 Whose death was witnessse of her spotlesse life :
 Or pen'd the praise of sad Cornelia,
 Whose blamelesse name hath made her fame so rife,
 As noble Pompey's most renowned wife :
 Hither unto your home direct your eies,
 Whereas, unthought on, much more matter lies. [10]

¹ Mr Malone, in his list of the most authentic editions of Shakspeare's poems, registers the publication of his *Tarquin and Lucrece*, in 1594. An allusion complimentary may therefore have been made to it in this passage. (Brydges.)

From

'The Legend of Matilda the chafte, daughter to the
Lord Robert Fitzwater, poysoned by King John.'¹

By Michaell Drayton. 1594.

Lucrece, of whom proude Rome hath boasted long
Lately reuiu'd to liue another age,
And here ariv'd to tell of *Tarquins* wrong,
Her chafte deniall, and the Tyrants rage,
Acting her passions on our stately stage.
She is remembered, all forgetting me,
Yet I, as fayre and chafte as ere was She.

¹ Printed in a small volume of Drayton's "Legends," of which the first is "The Tragicall Legend of Robert, Duke of Normandy."

P O L I M A N T E I A,

OR,

The meanes lawfull and vnlawfull, to

IUDGE OF THE FALL OF A

COMMONWEALTH, AGAINST

*the friuolous and foolish conie-
ctures of this age.*

Whereunto is added,

*A Letter from England to her three daughters,**Cambridge, Oxford, Innes of Court, and to all the**rest of her inhabitants: perswading them to a**constant vnitie of what religion soever they**are, for the defence of our dread soveraigne,**and natiue cuntry: most requisite for**this time wherein wee**now live.**Inuide, quod nequeas imitari carpere noli:**Nil nisi cum sumptu mentem oculosque iuvat.**Printed by John Legate, Printer to the Vniuersitie
of Cambridge. 1595.**And are to be sold at the signe of the Sunne in Pauls
Church-yard in London.*

"England to her three Daughters" says,—

[*Sign. R 2 to R. 3.*]

*Schollers
must learne
patience,*

*M. Alabla-
ster.
Spenser and
others.*

*Lydia clou-
ded, whose
teares are
making.*

*All praise
wooriky.
Lucrecia
Sweet
Shak-
speare.
Eloquent
Gaueton.*

*Wanton
Adonis.
Watson's
heyre.
So well gra-
ced Antho-
nie deser-
ueth immor-
tall praise
from the hand
of that di-
uine Lady
who like Co-
rinna contem-
ding with
Pindarus
was oft vi-
ctorious.*

"Let your children (daughters) content themselves; leaue to repine at baser fortunes: let them be perswaded of this, that Fame shall be their seruant, Honour shall bee their subiect, Glory shalbe their crown, Eternitie their inheritance: (then indeard wit decking admired daughters) write and let the worlde know that heavens harmonie is no musicke, in respect of your sweete, & well arte-tuned strings: that *Italian Ariosto* did but shadowe the meanest part of thy muse, that *Tassos Godfrey* is not worthie to make compare with your truelie eternizing *Eliza's stile*: let France-admired *Bellaw*, and courtlike amarous *Rousard* confesse that there be of your children, that in these latter times haue farre surpassed them. Let diuine *Bartasse* eternally praise worthie for his weeks worke, say the best things were made first: Let other countries (sweet *Cambridge*) enuie, (yet admire) my *Virgil*, thy petrarch, diuine *Spenser*. And vnlesse I erre, (a thing easie in such simplicitie) deluded by dearlie beloued *Delia*, and fortunatelie fortunate *Cleopatra*; *Oxford* thou maist extoll thy courte-deare-verse happy *Daniell*, whose sweete refined muse, in contracted shape, were sufficient amongst men, to gain pardon of the sinne to *Rosemond*, pittie to distressed *Cleopatra*, and euerliuing praise to her louing *Delia*: Register your childrens petegree in Fames forehead, so may you fill volumes with *Chausers* praise, with *Lydgate*, the Scottish knight, & such like, whose vnrefined tongues farre shorte of the excellencie of this age, wrote simplie & purelie as the times wear."

John Weever's Epigram to Shakspeare (A.D. 1595)
from the second edition of

“ E P I G R A M M E S

in the oldest cut, and
newest fashion.

A

*twise seven houres (in so many
weekes) studie*

No longer (like the fashion) not vn-
like to continue.

The first seven.

John Weeuer.

Sit voluisse, Sat valuisse.



At London

Printed by *V. S.* for *Thomas Bushell*, and are to be
sold at his shop at the great north doore
of *Paules* 1599”

[*Press-mark* :—Malone 904.]



THE FOURTH WEEKE.

Epig. 22. Ad Gulielmum Shakespeare.

Honie-tong'd *Shakespeare*, when I saw thine issue,
 I swore *Apollo* got them and none other,
 Their rose-tainted features cloth'd in tiffue,
 Some heaven born goddesse said to be their mother : [4]
 Rose-checkt *Adonis* with his amber tresses,
 Faire fire-hot *Venus* charming him to loue her,
 Chaste *Lucretia* virgine-like her dresfes,
 Prowd lust-ftung *Tarquine* seeking still to proue her : [8]
Romea Richard ; more, whose names I know not,
 Their sugred tongues, and power attractiue beuty
 Say they are Saints, although that Sts they flew not,
 For thousands vowes to them subiectiue dutie : [12]
 They burn in loue thy childrē *Shakespear* het thē,
 Go, wo thy Muse more Nymphish brood beget them.



[*Sign. E 6.*]

F. DOUCE'S MS. NOTE.

Weever says he was scarcely 20 years old when he wrote these epigrams :
 but, according to the date of the print of him by Cecill, he was 23 when they
 were printed in 1599. [&c. &c.]

[The first edition appeared in 1595 ? which would make him about 20.]
 (2 lines on leaf ' *Sign. A 5,*'

As daigne to view my tender-blushing youth
 That twenty twelue months yet did neuer know.)

From "The Excellencie of the English tongue by R. C. [i. e. Richard Carew] of Anthony Esquire to W. C." written about 1595-6, and inserted by W. Camden after his chapter on "Languages," in "Remaines concerning Britaine," p. 43. *London, by John Legatt, 1614.* [40. C. 57. Art. Seld: *Press-mark.*] (*Not in the first edition, 1605.*)

"The long words that we borrow being intermingled with the short of our owne store, make vp a perfect harmonie, by culling from out which mixture (with iudgement) you may frame your speech according to the matter you must worke on, maiesticall, pleasant, delicate, or manly more or lesse, in what sort you please. Adde hereunto, that whatsoever grace any other language carrieth in verse or Prose, in Tropes or Metaphors, in Ecchoes and Agnominations, they may all bee liuely and exactly represented in ours: will you haue Platoes veine? reade Sir *Thomas Smith*, the *Ionicke*? Sir *Thomas Moore*. *Ciceroes*? *Ascham*, *Varro*? *Chaucer*, *Demosthenes*? Sir *Iohn Cheeke* (who in his treatise to the Rebels, hath comprised all the figures of Rhetorick. Will you reade Virgill? take the Earle of Surrey. *Catullus*? Shakespheare and Barlowes fragment, Ouid? Daniell, Lucan? Spencer, Martial? Sir Iohn Dauies and others: will you haue all in all for Prose and verse? take the miracle of our age, Sir Philip Sidney."

From

Alba. / The Months / Minde of a Me-/lancholy Lover,,/ diuided
 into three / parts : / By R. T. *Gentleman.* / Herevnto is added a /
 most excellent pathetical and passionate Let-/ter, sent by Duke
D'Epernoun, vnto the late / French King, *Henry* the 3. of that
 name,/ when he was commanded from the / Court, and from his
 Royall / Companie. Translated / into English by the / foresaid
 Au-/thor./ *Spes, Amor, & Fortuna valete.* / At London./ Printed
 by *Felix Kyngston*, for *Matthew / Lownes.* 1598./ 8°, A—I in eights,
 and a leaf of K.

LOVES LABOR LOST, I once did see a Play,
 Ycleped so, so called to my paine,
 Which I to heare to my small Ioy did stay,
 Giuing attendance on my froward Dame,
 My misgiuing minde presaging to me ill,
 Yet was I drawne to see it gainst my Will. [6]

This *Play* no *Play*, but Plague was vnto me,
 For there I lost the Loue I liked most :
 And what to others seemde a Iest to be,
 I, that (in earnest) found vnto my cost.
 To euery one (saue me) 'twas *Comicall*,
 Whilst *Tragick* like to me it did befall. [12]

Each Actor plaid in cunning wise his part,
 But chiefly Those entrapt in *Cupids* snare :
 Yet All was fained, twas not from the hart,
 They seemde to grieue, but yet they felt no care :
 T'was I that Griefe (indeed) did beare in brest,
 The others did but make a show in Iest. [18]

Yet neither faining theirs, nor my meere Truth,
Could make her once so much as for to smile:
Whilst she (despite of pitie milde and ruth)
Did sit as skorning of my Woes the while.
Thus did she sit to see Love lose his Love,
Like hardned Rock that force nor power can moue. [24]
Sign. G (5).

[The Society has to thank Mr W. Carew Hazlitt for this copy, and the collation of it; and Mr Henry Huth for allowing his most rare volume to be used for the purpose.]

A REMEMBRANCE OF SOME ENGLISH POETS.

From "Poems in Diuers humors." London, 1598. Sign. E. 2 back.
 [Being the fourth tract in a volume of which the first bears Richard
 Barnfeild's name : signatures running on throughout.]

Liue *Spenser* euer, in thy *Fairy Queene* :
 Whose like (for deepe Conceit) was neuer seene.
 Crownd mayst thou bee, vnto thy more renowne,
 (As King of Poets) with a Lawrell Crowne. [4]

And *Daniell*, praised for thy sweet-chast Verse :
 Whose Fame is grav'd on *Rosamonds* blacke Herse.
 Still mayst thou liue : and still be honored,
 For that rare Worke, *The White Rose and the Red.* [8]

And *Drayton*, whose wel-written Tragedies,
 And sweete Epistles, soare thy fame to skies.
 Thy learned Name, is æquall with the rest ;
 Whose stately Numbers are so well adress. [12]

And *Shakespeare* thou, whose hony-flowing Vaine,
 (Pleasing the World) thy Praises doth obtaine.
 Whose *Venus*, and whose *Lucrece* (sweete, and chaste)
 Thy Name in fames immortall Booke haue plac't. [16]
 Liue euer you, at least in Fame liue euer :
 Well may the Bodye dye, but Fame dies neuer.

JOHN MARSTON'S SCOVARGE OF VILLANIE :

[*Press-mark* :—Malone 414.]16mo, Lond., by I[ames] R[oberts], 1598. (*Anon.*)

SATYRE. X.

[Sign. H 3, back.]

Humours.

.

A hall, a hall,

Roome for the Spheres, the Orbes celestiall
 Will daunce *Kemps Tigge*. They'le reuel with neate iumps
 A worthy Poet hath put on their Pumps ?
 O wits quick trauers, but *sance ceo's* slow,
 Good faith tis hard for nimble *Curio*.
 Yee gracious Orbs, keepe the old measuring, [7]
 All's spoyle if once yee fall to capering.

Luscus what's playd to day ? faith now I know [9]
 I set thy lips abroach, from whence doth flow
 Naught but pure *Iuliat* and *Romio*. [11]
 Say, who acts best ? *Drusus*, or *Roscio* ?
 Now I haue him, that nere of ought did speake
 But when of playes or Plaiers he did treat.

H'ath made a common-place booke out of plaies, [15]
 And speakes in print, at least what ere he sayes
 Is warranted by Curtaine *plaudeties*, [17]
 If ere you heard him courting *Lesbias* eyes ;
 Say (Cuteous Sir) speakes he not mouingly
 From out some new pathetique Tragedie ?
 He writes, he railles, he iests, he courts, what not,
 And all from out his huge long scraped stock
 Of well penn'd playes. [see p. 188.]

VARIATIONS IN THE 1599 EDITION OF MARSTON.

[Bodleian *Press-mark*.—8° L 550. B.S.]

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. 7. Yee gracious Orbs, &c., and the next line, 8, are in Italic type. | |
| 7. Orbes <i>for</i> Orbs. | 11. <i>Romeo</i> for <i>Romio</i> . |
| 9. fayth <i>for</i> faith. | 15. <i>playes</i> <i>for</i> plaies. |
| 11. <i>Iuliet</i> for <i>Iuliat</i> . | 17. <i>plaudities</i> for <i>plaudeties</i> . |

John Marston's "Scovrge of Villanie; *London, by I. R. 1598.*"

SATYRE. VII.

A Cynicke Satyre.[*Press-mark*.:—Malone 414.]

A *Man, a man, a kingdome for a man.*
 Why how now currish mad *Athenian* ?
 Thou Cynick dogge, see'st not streets do swarme
 With troupes of men? No, no, for *Circes* charme
 Hath turn'd them all to ¹swine ;

Is this a *Man* ? Nay, an incarnate deuill,
 That struts in vice, and glorieth in euill.

A man, a man : peace Cynick, yon is one,
 A compleat soule, of all perfection.

A man, a man, Loe yonder I espie
 The shade of *Nestor* in sad grautie ;

A man, a man : peace Cynick, yon's a man.
 Behold yon sprightly dread *Mauortian*.
 With him I stop thy currish barking chops.

¹ Big S in the 2nd ed., 1599. The two editions agree in nearly every other respect.

